U850.32
942.67

R21

Metropolitan Borough of Poplar.

PUBLIC LIBRARIES.

REFERENCE DEPARTMENT.

This book must not, under any circumstances, be taken from the Reading Room.

POPLAR LIBRARIES
CANCELLED

TRANSFERRED TO
Metropolitan Special Collections
LEWISHAM

LONDON BOROUGH OF LEWISHAM
LIBRARY SERVICE

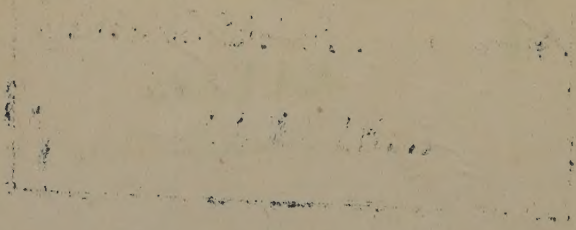
Author

Title

BOOK STORE

Books or discs must be returned on or before the last date stamped on label or on card in book pocket. Books or discs can be renewed by telephone, letter or personal call unless required by another reader. After library hours use the Ansafone Service (01-698 7347). For hours of opening and charges see notices at the above branch, but note that all lending departments close at 1 pm on Wednesday and all libraries are closed on Sundays, Good Friday, Christmas Day, Bank Holidays and Saturdays prior to Bank Holidays.

METROPOLITAN
SPECIAL COLLECTION



942.67—5

THE

ESSEX REVIEW:

AN ILLUSTRATED QUARTERLY RECORD OF EVERYTHING OF PERMANENT INTEREST IN THE COUNTY.

EDITED BY

EDWARD A. FITCH, F.L.S.,

AND

MISS C. FELL SMITH.

VOLUME XVII.

TRANSFERRED TO
Metropolitan Special Collections
LEWISHAM

"He who recalls into existence what oblivion has vanished enjoys a bliss like creating."—NIEBUHR.

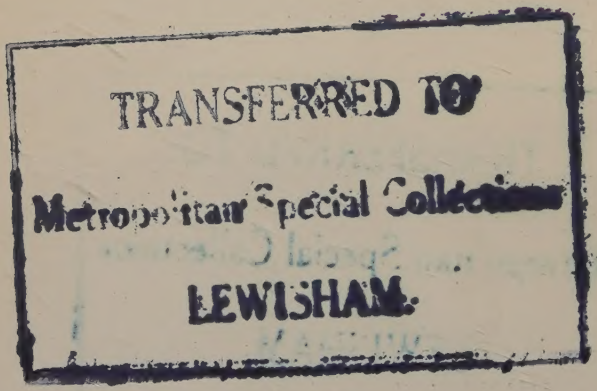
ELLIOT STOCK.
BENHAM & CO.

LONDON:
SIMPKIN, MARSHALL, HAMILTON, KENT & CO., LTD.

1908.

36
052

MET. BOROUGH OF
PUBLIC
LIBRARIES
POPLAR


TRANSFERRED TO
Metropolitan Special Collections
LEWISHAM.

INDEX TO VOLUME XVII.

MET. BOROUGH OF POPLAR PUBLIC LIBRARIES

*** *Entries in Italics refer to Notices of Books.*

Althams of Mark Hall in the Seventeenth Century, Some, by a Descendant, 74, 134
Althorne, 42

Beacons in Essex, 221
Bell, H. Soady, Family of Bell of Essex, by, 15
Bell of Essex, The Family of, by H. Soady Bell, 15
Bewers, W., Pamphlet by, 226
Blackmore Church, 40
Boreham, New Hall, 57, 121, 224
Bourke, Mrs. Hubert, An Old Essex Manor House, by, 211
Bowers Gifford, 170
Bow, March of the Cavaliers from, to Stratford, by G. H. Warlow, 186
Bradhurst, Miss Christine M. G., Verses by, 179
Bradhurst, Mrs., Shells in our Rivers and Ditches, by, 87
Browne, R. H., note by, 48
Cavaliers, The March of the, from Bow to Colchester, by G. H. Warlow, 186
Centenarian, A Reputed, 47
Chaseway, 174
Chelmsford and Bacon, 117; Chapel Jubilee, 170; Chapel Centenary, 226
Christy, Miller, Some Obsolete Farm Implements, by, 21
Clark, Rev. Andrew, LL.D., Hadleigh Rectory, by, 11; Great Leighs Registers, by, 91; Essex Territorial Force in 1608, 98; Essex Woollen Manufactures, 203; Purveyance in Essex, 213; Notes by, 46, 117, 173, 221
Clavering, Old Carving at, 198
Coast Defence 1625, 173
Colchester, St. Giles' Church, 41; Hospital, 38; Museum, 226
Collett, Henry Haines, Churchyard Cottage at Theydon Garnon, by, 18
Cook, Robert, obituary, 218
Cox, Rev. J. Charles, *The Cathedral Church and See of Essex*, by, 175
Croppenburgh Family, 220
Dedham, A History of, by Rev. C. A. Jones, 55, 172
Dormer Pierce, Rev. F., Wickford, Essex and Wickford, R.I., by, 1
Dovercourt, 170
Dunmow, A Country Doctor at, in 1644, by Miss C. Fell Smith, 199
Earls Colne, Reputed Roman Well, note by J. A. Tregelles, 174
East Horndon, 171
Essex Antiquary, An, (I. C. Gould), 31
Essex Boundaries, 44
Essex Cathedral, 41, *The Cathedral Church and See of Essex*, by Rev. J. C. Cox, 175
Essex County Sports and Amateur Championships, 94
—— Manor House, An old, by Mrs. Hubert Bourke, 211
—— New Justices of Peace, 116
—— Lays and Legends of the Forest of, 174; Manor House, An Old, 211
—— Territorial Force in 1608, by Rev. Dr. Clark, 98
—— Woollen Manufactures, by Rev. A. Clark, 203
Essex Review, The, Our History and Progress, 36
Epping, Alms Box at All Saints' Church, by C. B. Sworder, 207
—— St. John Baptist, 40
Eustace, Rev. R. H., Death, 171

Fanshawe, Memoirs of Ann Lady Fanshawe, 54
Farm Implements, Some Obsolete, by Miller Christy, 21
Fell Smith, Miss C., A Country Doctor in 1644, by, 199
Font of Theydon Bois, Supposed Old, by A. A. West, 34

Gallagher, Mrs. (Alice Argente) Death of, 116
Gepp, Rev. E., Notes by, 45, 118, 174
Gerish, W. B., Note by, 173
Gould, I. Chalkley, F.S.A., Obituary notice of, 31
Gould, Miss B. M., Leaves from an Essex Still Room, by, 66
Gould, Miss I. L., Leaves from an Essex Still Room, by, 66
Great Burstead Church, 41
Great Leighs Registers, by Rev. A. Clark, 91
Great Yeldham Bells, 217
Green, J. J., Roger Preston, his Letter, etc., by, 132

Hadleigh Rectory, by Rev. A. Clark, LL.D., 11
Hardingham, Edward, *Lays and Legends of the Forest of Essex*, by, 174
Harvey, Daniel, of Wivenhoe, 47
Harvey, George, of Maldon, 48
Harvey, Captain G. H., Note by, 48
Harwich, 132
Henniker, Sir Bridges, Death, 218
Honeywood, Col. Philip, 225
Hop Cultivation, 1625, 173
Houblon, Lady Alice Archer, *The Houblon Family*, by, 51
Houblon Family, The, Its Story and Times, by Lady Alice Archer Houblon, 51

James, Anthony, 172
Johnston, Andrew, J.P., note by, 44

Jones, Rev. C. A., *History of Dedham*, by, 55, 172

Kemp, Charles Fitch, Obituary, 43

Laindon Hills, 40
Leaves from an Essex Still Room, by I. L. and B. M. Gould, 66
Lewer, Florence, The Sampler, by, 146
Lewer, H. W., The Flail, by, 177; A Book of Simples, edited by, 223
Lieutenancy Book for Essex, A, by Rev. A. Clark, 157
Lincoln College, Oxford, by Stephen A. Warner, 222
Little Dunmow, Windmills round, 44

Mahony, Pierce, note by, 221
Maldon Coparcenary, A, 46; George Harvey of, 48; Church Goods, 48; All Saints Church, 217
Mark Hall, Latton, Some Althams of, 74, 134
Mashonaland, Bishop of, see Powell, Rev. E. N.
Masonic Lodge, 38

New Hall, Boreham, by M. P., 57, 121; mentioned, 224

Otes Manor House, 211
Owers, F. H., pamphlet by, 226

Parry, Lieut.-Col. G. S., note by, 47
Pemberton, Rev. J. H., *Roses, their History, Development, and Cultivation*, by, 119
Petre, Lord, death of, 172
Plaistow, New Church at, 40
Powell, Rev. E. N., Gifts to, 41
Preston, Roger, Letter of, from Harwich, 1666, by J. J. Green, 132
Purveyance in Essex, by Dr. Clark, 213

Quarters of the Roads, 45

Registers, New County, 38
Reviews of Books. *Stephen Marshall; A Forgotten Puritan*, by E. Vaughan, 49; *The Houblon Family*, by Lady Alice Archer Houblon, 51; *Memoirs of Lady Fanshawe*, 54; *History of Dedham*, by Rev. C. A. Jones, 55; *Lays and Legends of the Forest of Essex*, by E. Hardingham, 174; *The Cathedral Church and See of Essex*, by Rev. J. C. Cox, 175; *Nothing but Rose Leaves Crumpled and Sere*, 196; *Lincoln College*, by S. A. Warner, 224
River Pollution, 39
Romer, William, Obituary, 42
Rose Leaves, Crumpled and Sere, Nothing but, by C. M. G. Bradhurst, 196
Ruck, Family of, Maldon, 117
Rural Amenities, by Rev. E. Gepp, 118
Rural Identities by Rev. E. Gepp, 174

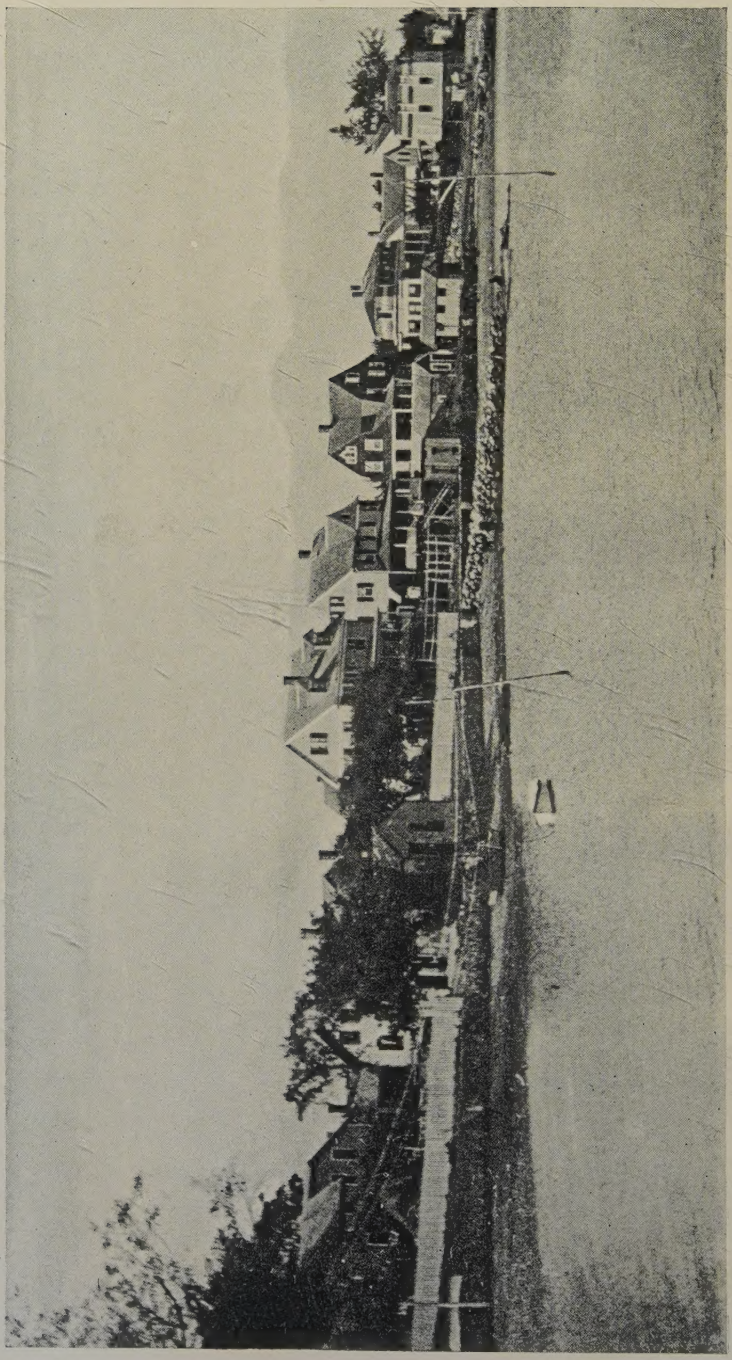
Sampler, The, by Florence Lewer, 146
Simples, A Book of, edited by H. W. Lewer, 223
Shells in our Rivers and Ditches, by Evangeline Bradhurst, 87
Small Holdings, by Rev. E. Gepp, 219
Stebbing, Church, 217
Sworder, Charles B., The Alms Box at All Saints, Epping, by, 207

Taylor, Dr. John, Death, 218
Tendring Bells, 40
Theydon Bois, Supposed Old Font of, by Arthur A. West 34
Theydon Garnon, The Churchyard Cottage at, by H. H. Collett, 18
Thompson, Thomas, Obituary, 115
Tregelles, J. A., note by, 174

Vaughan, Miss E., *Stephen Marshall*, A Forgotten Puritan, by, 49

Ware, Rev. J. H., Obituary, 43
Warlow, G. H., March of the Cavaliers from Bow to Stratford by, 186
Warner, Stephen A., *Lincoln College*, by, 222
Wells, Frederick, Obituary, 171
West, Arthur A., Supposed Old Font of Theydon Bois, by, 34
Wickford, Essex and Wickford, R.I., by Rev. F. Dormer Pierce, 1
Windmills round Little Dunmow, 44
Wivenhoe, 47
Wood, Sir Matthew, death, 218
Worrin, Hastings, Note by, 44

MET. BOROUGH OF
PUBLIC
LIBRARIES
POPLAR



WICKFORD, RHODE ISLAND.—*From the Bay.*

THE

ESSEX REVIEW:

A Quarterly Journal for the County.

MET. BOROUGH OF POPLAR PUBLIC LIBRARIES

No. 65.] JANUARY, 1908. VOL. XVII.

WICKFORD, ESSEX, AND WICKFORD, RHODE ISLAND, U.S.A.

BY THE REV. F. DORMER PIERCE, M.A.,

Rector of Wickford, Essex (Fellow of the Royal Historical Society).

IT is thought that a short account of a visit I recently paid to preach at the two-hundredth anniversary of Wickford Church, Rhode Island, U.S.A., may interest the readers of the *Essex Review*.

Wickford is one of the many parishes in New England called after the names of the old homes in the old country. It was natural that in New England, the part of America first settled by emigrants from the old country, the names of English homes and villages should predominate.

It is equally natural that, as the majority of those settlers came from the Eastern Counties, we find East Anglian names more frequent than those of places in the north and west of England. So it is that we find such names as Essex, Essex Junction and Essex County, Springfield, Danbury, Haverhill, Epping, Brentwood and Plaistow (Vermont State); Hatfield, Chelmsford, Billerica (*sic*), Dedham, Braintree, Barstable, Harwich and New Braintree (Massachusetts); Danbury and Colchester (Connecticut); and Stratford, Essex County and Langford in New York State.

How many of these were founded by inhabitants of the old Essex towns and villages it is impossible to say on this side of the Atlantic. Local history is, however, much better preserved and cared for in the States than with us, and it is probable that by making application to some of the Historical Societies, such as the Rhode Island Historical Society, the Massachusetts

Historical Society, and others, a great many interesting details of the connections of Essex with New England could be discovered. Of the connection between old and new Wickford it is possible for the present writer to speak somewhat more exactly.

On Nov. 27th, 1614, Elizabeth Read, of Wickford, was baptized in Wickford Parish Church, Essex, by the Rev. Augustine Lyndsell, Rector, and this lady is the connecting link between Old and New Wickford.

The original inhabitants of the peninsula on which Wickford, R.I., is situated were the Narragansett Indians, who for 'thirteen English coats' exchanged with some of the early Colonists a tract of land ten miles long by thirteen miles broad. The Narragansett tribe of Indians continued its corporate existence down to the year 1893, when they met for a final pow-wow in Charlestown, and Fort Ninigret, on Summit Hill, is still a mark of interest to tourists as one of the landmarks of the Red Men.

The modern village of Wickford began with a blockhouse, used as a fortress against the wily and savage natives of the new country. It was also a trading place with the Indians, and a dwelling place for Richard Smith and his family, who came from Gloucestershire in the latter years of Charles I., 'because of religious persecution.' For a while he dwelt in Taunton, Plymouth Colony, but, not finding there sufficient liberty of conscience, he purchased thirty thousand acres of land of the Narragansett Indians, and, floating timber from Taunton to a bend of the cove, about a mile to the north-west of what is now Wickford, in 1639 put up, in the thickest of the barbarians, the first house builded among the Indians of this neighbourhood. Some years later, in 1683, the blockhouse was the scene of a struggle between the Rhode Islanders and men from the United Colonies, who wished to bring the Colonists under the rule of the King's Commissioners, when the demeanour of Mr. Smith and his followers, the men of Wickford, was so fierce that the Commission had to adjourn to Boston to pursue its deliberations. Smith's blockhouse is still standing, and has much of historical and antiquarian interest to repay a visitor to it.

The successors of Richard Smith in the lands of Wickford were the Updyke family. Gysbert Opten Dyck, a bachelor from

Wessel, Germany, married Catherine, daughter of Mr. Richard Smith, on September 26, 1643, at the Dutch Church, New York, and the family is still represented in New England, in the person of Mr. Daniel Berkeley Updyke, of Boston. Representatives of the Updyke family lived in the blockhouse until 1784, and the present village of Wickford was lotted out by Mr. Lodowick Updyke in 1709. Even as late as 1777 the assembly granted a charter to the Newtown Rangers, a company doing duty at Updyke's Newtown, though the Colonial Records as far

back as 1663 say that the town for the future is to be called Wickford. How it received this name we must now enquire.

Elizabeth Read, baptized at Wickford, Essex, in 1614, whom we have described as the connecting link between old and new Wickford, emigrated to America and married Mr. John Winthrop, Governor of Connecticut, and well called 'the flower of American Puritanism.' This gentleman was the son of the famous John Winthrop, Governor of Massachusetts, and was himself a person of considerable renown. He paid a visit to England between 1633 and 1645. During this visit, or on his return to New England, he married Elizabeth Read, and

together, in 1645, they paid a visit to the lands which had been recently granted to Winthrop, near Smith's blockhouse. Here, it is said, that Mrs. Winthrop, being much struck by the resemblance between the situation of her husband's lands round the blockhouse, and that of her old home in Essex, said to her husband, 'Let us call this Wickford'; thus by an old Wickford inhabitant was the name of the ancient village of the East Saxons perpetuated in the great American Republic. Memory likes to dwell on the sweet Elizabeth Winthrop bringing into existence this new Wickford across the ocean, and being indirectly the cause of many pleasant ties between the two places.

That another origin of the name has been suggested, it must in all fairness be said. The teamsters who drew timber down to the point at the terminus of Main Street complained how bad the Ford was across the creek at night. In order to remedy the gloom, they furnished a lamp which consisted of a wick drawn through a ring and elevated to burn, the other end drawing from a vessel of oil, or grease in an open pot, which contrivance was called a Kill Devil. In time it came to be spoken of as the Ford at the Wick, and so Wickford. If this should be the true origin of the name, it would be curious, as the ancient Wic fort in Essex was almost certainly so called, as the village of the ford. Close to Wickford, R.I., is still to be seen Elizabeth's Spring, so called from Elizabeth Read drinking at it in her travels up to Connecticut, in the beginning of the country. It issues from the bank of the cove at the root of a fine old chestnut tree.

The situation of Wickford, R.I., does indeed resemble in some ways, though in other ways it is much superior to, the Wickford of the old country. It is finely placed on an arm of Narragansett Bay, just opposite the fashionable town of Newport, on a level stretch of country in Washington County, Rhode Island State. It has fine, broad streets, up to which come the arms of the bay, and the thoroughfares are well planted with shade-trees. The houses are, of course, mostly of timber, but most comfortable and commodious, and the hospitality of the people is unbounded. There are some exceedingly pretty drives in the country round, the scenery of which reminds one in many ways of the rural parts of the old country. Among the show places round

Wickford is the birthplace of Gilbert Stuart. This famous painter was born about four miles to the south-west of the village. There is still to be seen the unpretentious house, now a farm-house, that was his birthplace. The entry in the register of Narragansett Church reads :—'April 11th, 1756, being Palm Sunday, Dr. McSparran read, preached, and baptized a child named Gilbert Stuart, son of Gilbert Stuart, the snuff grinder.' Sureties, the doctor himself, Mr. Benjamin Mumford, and Mrs. Hannah Mumford. As a painter of heads, Gilbert Stuart

BIRTHPLACE OF GILBERT STUART.

occupies a foremost place among American artists, his portrait of Washington being considered the standard likeness.

We must now turn to the church life of Wickford, the immediate cause of the present writer's interest in Wickford, and the centre of the life of the place.

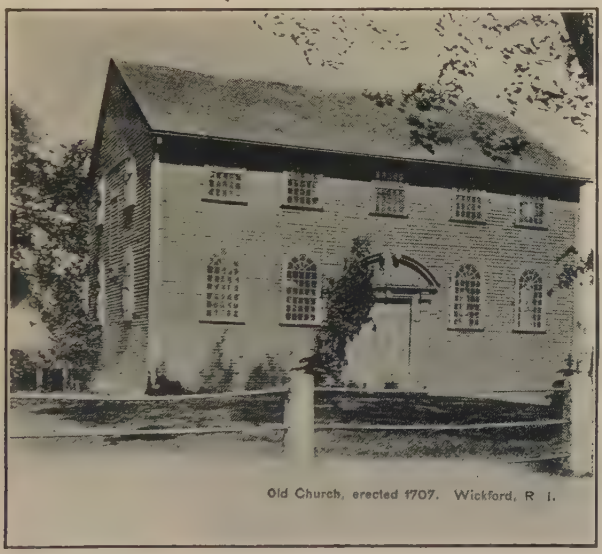
Situated on a green and retired spot at the end of a lane, standing solitary and comparatively useless, is a rustic and venerable building that bears the marks of age, as the Western continent counts age. Two hundred years ago this year (1907), this church was built upon another foundation, about five miles from its present site, the land being given by Lodowyck

Updyke. Driving south-west from Wickford, we pass Pentazekia's Corner and come to a spot that now seems desolate indeed. But this spot was equidistant from most of the large landed proprietors scattered about Boston Neck and South Kingstown, who then made up the congregation. Previous to this, the English Churchmen had worshipped in private houses. But, earnestly desiring the priestly offices and a holy temple for the worship of God, they applied to the Bishop of London for a clergyman. The Rev. Christopher Bridge was transferred from King's Chapel, Boston, and in 1706 became the regular incumbent of St. Paul's, Narragansett.

Under his care, the church, a timber building, was built in 1707, by the voluntary offerings of the people. The church was, and still is, a plain oblong structure with curved ceiling, many windows, and a wide gallery. There was an old-fashioned wine-glass pulpit with reading-desk below. The chancel and altar were in the east, apart from the place of Common Prayer and preaching.

To the people of an English parish of to-day, even perhaps those of the modern English Wickford, the obstacles to worship in that church two centuries ago would seem almost insurmountable. Far removed from the residences, without communication except by 'driftways,' or cattle paths through the different plantations, with access only on horseback, whatever the state of the weather, with nothing but heated soap-stones, or little tin foot stoves with live coals, to make the frigid temperature endurable—who among us would face such discomforts as getting to church amid sleet and snow, and sitting to hear the long sermons of those days, with the mercury twenty or thirty degrees below zero? But our ancestors were made of hardier stuff, and supported the different rectors well by their presence and their gifts. The Rev. Mr. Bridge, the first regular rector, is spoken of as a religious and worthy man, a very fine scholar and a grave preacher. His 'performances' in the pulpit were solid, judicious and profitable. His conversation was agreeable and improving. He did not remain long in Wickford, but removed to Rye, New York. In 1717 the Society for the Propagation of the Gospel sent the Rev. William Guy as missionary over the Narragansett parish. He had been labouring in Charleston, and on the desolation of his parish by

the Yammosee Indians in 1715, he was sent to Narragansett at a salary of seventy pounds a year. The members of the Church of England in Narragansett received him with much joy. They presently provided him with a convenient house, and because it was at some distance from the church they also gave him a horse and showed him many marks of favour. He was well respected by the people, and several who lived regardless of all religion before he came began to be constant attendants at



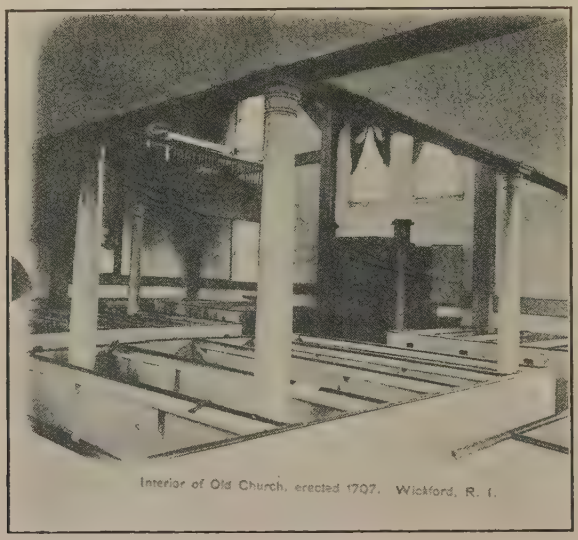
Old Church, erected 1707. Wickford, R. I.

divine worship. In 1719 he returned to St. Andrew's Church, Charleston.

In April, 1721, the Rev. James McSparran arrived from England, and took charge of St. Paul's Church, Narragansett, which had, since the departure of Mr. Guy, been dependent upon occasional ministrations. Mr. McSparran, formerly a Congregationalist, now attached himself to the historic church, received ordination as a priest from the Archbishop, and strove to win others to that zealous devotion to the fellowship of the Church which he from this time forward showed. Dr. McSparran settled down in Wickford, and built himself a Glebe House on a beautiful site overlooking the Petaquamscote River as it wends its way to the Atlantic Ocean. In this choice spot

Dr. McSparran had rare enjoyment from the many congenial friends who came from Newport, Boston, and even Virginia, and shared the Colonial hospitality of Narragansett families. He was a great scholar and took young gentlemen to read with him.

The doctor was a man of great strength of mind and body, and was instrumental in building churches at Warwick, sixteen miles north of Wickford, and at Westerly, twenty-five miles west of Wickford, in which, as well as at New Bristol, he used to minister and visit the people. His wife, a daughter of Mr.



Interior of Old Church, erected 1707. Wickford, R. I.

Wm. Gardiner, of Boston Neck, Narragansett, is buried in the churchyard of Christ Church, Westminster. The rector of St. Paul's was bowed down by his great loss and never really recovered the blow of her death. He died on 1st December, 1757, and was buried under the altar of St. Paul's, Narragansett, the funeral being the occasion for a great demonstration by the clergy and laity of Rhode Island. He was a man of marked ability and great devotion. On the site of the old St. Paul's, amid the desolation of the old burial ground, there has been erected a cross of white marble bearing this inscription : 'Erected in grateful memory of James McSparran, D.D.,

Missionary of the S.P.G., and Rector of this church from 1721 to his death in 1757.'

The Rev. Samuel Fayerweather was the successor to Dr. McSparran, and was sent out by the S.P.G. in 1760. He was witty enough to reprimand his parishioners in the following words for their negligence in attending church. 'You have a thousand frivolous excuses, but there is none more common with you than the plea of foul weather; but come here and you will always find Fayer weather.'

Dr. Fayerweather devoted himself greatly to the good of the negroes, being encouraged in this by the S.P.G., and especially by a sermon on the subject preached at the anniversary of the Society in 1761. The War of American Independence made great disturbance in the church life of Wickford, as elsewhere, and for a time the church was closed, and Dr. Fayerweather ministered from house to house. After his death in 1781, the church was used as barracks for the American soldiers, and no other minister was appointed by the S.P.G. until 1787. In 1800 the old church was taken down, carried to its present site, and put together again on the site given by Lodowyck Updyke in the middle of the present town. In 1817, the first Sunday School in Rhode Island was started in Wickford by the rector of St. Paul's, and soon 100 children were attending it. Amongst the treasures of St. Paul's Church is the set of Communion plate, consisting of silver chalice, paten and baptismal bason, presented by Queen Anne. The chalice and paten were used when the present writer celebrated the Blessed Sacrament in St. Paul's Church, on the occasion of the 200th anniversary of the founding of the church. Among the other rectors of St. Paul's was Bishop Thomas, the late well-known Bishop of Kansas, who died in 1895. By his wise and energetic ministration, and by the impression of his singularly beautiful and devoted character, the church in Kansas has made good progress in numbers and spirituality. In 1847, the new church was founded in Wickford, the corner stone being laid by the Bishop of Rhode Island on 1st September, 1847. The church was consecrated on St. Paul's Day, 1848, and from that time the old church has been practically deserted. The new church has many interesting monuments to Dr. McSparran, Dr. Fayerweather, Dr. Burge, and other incumbents of St. Paul's.

There are some fine stained-glass windows and a good organ, with all the other aids to divine worship. The church is also provided with a rectory, glebe, and a guild house, and, but for some unfortunate investments, the Parish of St. Paul's would be in excellent financial condition. The condition of the Narragansett country has, of course, altered very materially from the old days of the plantations.

The prosperity of those days has given place very largely to desolation. The land is for the most part untilled, and bears a sad resemblance to the English Wickford in the number of barren acres that the parish presents. Yet the parish has many attractions, and great advantages as a residential resort. It has a station (Wickford Junction) on the New York, New Haven, and Hartford line, but is superior to its English namesake in having also an admirable trolley-car system, which brings people down from Providence. It has also a regular service of boats across to Newport. The great attraction of Wickford is, of course, the beautiful Narragansett Bay, where fishing, boating and bathing are all to be had in abundance. Wickford, R.I., likes to call itself the Venice of America. Whether it has claims to such a high title is perhaps a question, but it is certainly a delightfully quiet and pretty seaside resort. The pleasure of a few days' visit there was greatly enhanced to the present writer by the extraordinary kindness and hospitality and demonstrations of friendship when he paid his recent visit to the parish. Nothing could have been more delightful than the cordial reception the rector and laity of St. Paul's were good enough to give him; by their friendly interest in the old Wickford, and their hospitable reception, making an occasion never to be forgotten. As he stood in the pulpit of the old St. Paul's, looking round on the great congregation gathered in the gallery, where the slaves used to sit, and in the old-fashioned pews in the body of the church, other and deeper thoughts came also, in their course; thoughts of those days when, nearly three hundred years ago, 'Religion stands a tip-toe in our land, Waiting to pass to the American strand,' and of that Faith which, no longer 'a tip-toe,' is still firmly planted amongst our people at home; thoughts of the unity of spiritual life that there is between the two great branches of the Anglo-Saxon race, life coming from the same

Divine Head and nourished by the same means of grace; thoughts of the great religious problems that lie before the mighty American people, problems, some the same, but many very different from those we have to face at home; thoughts of the many lessons we can learn from them: lessons of vigorous self-help, of virile independence, of masterly energy in adapting ourselves to the growing needs of a great people, of generous almsgiving, in which English Churchmen fall far behind their American brothers; lessons of ability to adapt their forms of prayer and worship to the necessities of later times; lessons of a common unity and brotherliness amongst Church people, somewhat lacking in our English life. Thoughts also there were, of course, of what American Church life might learn from our older historic order at home, but on these it is not for me to dwell. We can each strengthen the other greatly in meeting the great problems of the future; and each instance of intercourse between the Church in England and the Church in America, whether it is on a humble scale, as that of old and new Wickford, or on a great scale like the Pan-Anglican Congress to be held in London next June, can but help us to realize our unity in the Divine Head of the Holy Catholic Church.*

MET. BOROUGH OF PUBLIC LIBRARIES POPLAR

HADLEIGH RECTORY, 1825—1868.

BY REV. ANDREW CLARK, LL.D.

IN taking note of men who have filled public offices, it is right to have regard not only to those whom success has caused to rank as worthies, but also to those who failed, often less from personal faults than from stress of adverse circumstances. The records, in these latter cases, are frequently painful and even humiliating, but generally interesting and instructive. For this reason, the inglorious fortunes of the Rev. John Mavor, sometime Rector of Hadleigh, Essex, may be faithfully set out in this *Review*, no less than the eminent services of his successor.

John Mavor was born at Woodstock, Oxfordshire, about 1786. His father, William Fordyce Mavor, was an educationalist and divine of repute, master of Woodstock School, author of a highly esteemed *English Spelling Book*, LL.D. of

* For much of the information in this paper I am greatly indebted to Mrs. F B. Griswold, author of the *History of Wickford, R.I.*; also to the Editor of the *Sunday Tribune*, Providence, R.I., and to the publications of the *Rhode Island Historical Society*.

distant Aberdeen, and ultimately rector of Bladon-with-Woodstock (1810 till his death in 1837). John Mavor entered Wadham College, Oxford, in June, 1802, being then in his sixteenth year, and proceeded in due course to his B.A. degree early in 1806. There was at Lincoln College a fellowship, limited to natives of Oxfordshire, the appointment to which was not vested in the College itself, but in the Bishop of Lincoln. This was vacant at the time when Mavor took his degree; interest was made with the Bishop on his behalf, and he was nominated to it on April 29, 1806. As Fellow of Lincoln he took the degrees of M.A. in 1808 and of B.D. in 1816. College tradition represents him as a man by no means destitute of parts or learning, but of a haughty, imperious temper, which would brook no opposition and listen to no remonstrance. In November, 1823, he was appointed by Lincoln College to the interesting, but ill-paid, Perpetual Curacy of Foresthill, outside Oxford, which he was allowed by the College to hold without vacating his Fellowship. It was from the Manor House of Foresthill, it will be remembered, that Milton took his first wife, Mary Powell.

About 1800 (the exact date and the purchase-money are unknown) Lincoln College had acquired the patronage of Hadleigh, Essex, which had become detached from the manor and passed into the possessions of people who had no personal interest in the parish. In the beginning of 1825 the rectory fell vacant, and the College was able to exercise for the first time its right of patronage. Mavor was appointed 9th August, 1825, and, strangely enough, was not called on to resign his other college benefice of Foresthill. This circumstance suggests very distinctly that the Fellows were willing to conclude even a disadvantageous bargain, if only it would rid them of a somewhat overbearing and turbulent colleague. The acceptance of Hadleigh, of course, involved Mavor's removal from his Fellowship.

It was an age of pluralities. Mavor's plan was to serve Hadleigh by a curate, and to reside at Foresthill, where he hoped to make a good thing by preparing pupils for ordination and for the University. With this in view he took down the whole front of the parsonage there, and rebuilt it on a much larger scale, in very good workmanship and of excellent stone. The cost was considerably more than Mavor had in

hand, and was met by borrowing money on his personal security.

Probably owing to his domineering ways, his first pupils soon left him, and no others took their place. Mavor was speedily in financial difficulties, and the usurers into whose hands he had delivered himself lodged him in the debtor's side of Oxford Castle jail, paid the small annuity required for his maintenance there, and sequestered his benefices for their own benefit. The state of things at Hadleigh was, consequently, as follows: The usurers collected every penny of rectorial income they could, and had the Sunday duties, and the marriages, christenings and burials, discharged by the meanest cleric they could hire for the least money. In a few years it became certain that the original debt, both principal and interest, had been discharged, and that the liability was kept alive only by fraudulent expedients.

Mavor was now urged to institute legal proceedings to obtain a statement and audit of accounts; but his imprisonment had, by this time, so whetted his obstinacy that he had become a monomaniac. He would neither act himself, nor allow others to act for him, but passionately protested his belief that "the arm of the Lord would be visibly stretched forth to work his deliverance." Of his prison life, there are various remembrances, some pleasing, some farcical. He was frequently visited by his Oxford contemporaries, who found his conversation sensible and even scholarly, if only they could avoid stumbling upon any allusion to the persons whom he regarded as his persecutors. He had an excellent influence on his fellow-prisoners, acting as a sort of volunteer chaplain. Blind to his own faults, he was yet able to see clearly the faults of others, to remonstrate and to reason with them. He still retained his Academical vote (being qualified by residence within the precinct of the University!), and, on occasion of contested elections, he used to be taken out on security for the time being, and led in triumph to the polling-booth. The members of Common-Room subscribed for a new suit for him every year. There was a shamefast feeling that glossy clerical black was out-of-place in a debtors' prison, and a thrifty idea that a pepper-and-salt suit would wear longer before showing signs of shabbiness. One year, accordingly, a dark

grey cloth was chosen for the accustomed gift. But Mavor would not have it. His pride was hurt, he would rather go in a thread-bare suit than accept anything else than the correctest of black broadcloth.

In 1845, the diocese of Oxford was taken charge of by a vigorous prelate, Samuel Wilberforce, and he was at once informed of the unhappy state of affairs at Foresthill. He set himself to obtain new Orders in Council, 1846, giving Bishops authority to deal with the abuses of sequestered livings, and, on June 22, 1847, pronounced that Mavor had forfeited Foresthill. Nothing was done at Hadleigh to take advantage of the new legislation, but the end of the trouble was not long delayed. Mavor was full of rage against the College tenant of Foresthill Manor, because he had taken the leading part in moving for his eviction. In his mad way, he prophesied that the vengeance of heaven would speedily fall upon his enemy. Six years afterwards, the news that this farmer had been struck down by apoplexy in the street outside the Castle so excited Mavor's frenzied brain that he also had a shock and died 6th June, 1853.

Lincoln College had, a second time, to exercise its patronage, and sought to make up for its ill-starred first choice by sending to Hadleigh one of its best and most distinguished members. The new rector, nominated 9th Dec., 1853, was the Rev. Thomas Espinelle Espin, M.A., born at Louth, in Lincolnshire, in 1824 He entered Lincoln College in 1843, was elected scholar in 1846, and in that year took a First Class in Classics. His reputation was so great that when he stood for a Lincolnshire Fellowship in March, 1849, no other candidate had courage to appear against him. He became tutor of Lincoln College in 1852, but next year accepted the rectory of Hadleigh, with which he combined the professorship of theology at Queen's College, Birmingham.

When Espin went to Hadleigh, he found the parsonage a ruin. It had stood empty during the sequestration, and proved a convenient store, from which every one who wanted a brick, a plank, or a tile, helped himself. The whole fabric, put up to auction, fetched no more than £10, and, by reason of Mavor's insolvency, no dilapidation-money was forthcoming. A new parsonage house and rectory farm buildings were now built, at a cost of over £1,600, to which Lincoln College contributed £500. The new rector's stay at Hadleigh was not prolonged. In

1868 he removed to a Cheshire rectory, became Chancellor of Chester diocese, 1873, and Chancellor of Liverpool diocese, 1880; D.D. Oxford, 1880: honorary D.C.L., Durham, 1891. Although the greater part of his life-work thus belongs to northern dioceses, Mr. Chancellor Espin's fifteen years' incumbency at Hadleigh entitles Essex to enter him on its list of authors closely connected with the county. The following are some of his numerous dissertations on points of Church law and administration :—

(1) *Our want of clergy*, Oxford, 1863.
(2) *The supply and training of ministers*, London, 1863.
(3) *Clerical subscription and the Act of Uniformity*, Oxford, 1864.
(4) *The claims of the Church upon the Universities*, London, 1866.
(5) *Church organization in India*, London, 1877.
(6) *The probable results of Disestablishment*, London, 1892, and frequently reprinted.
(7) *Churchwardens: their office and duties*, London, 1888.

During Mr. Espin's incumbency Lincoln College had an offer of £2,800 for the advowson. This it accepted, and so, in 1868, its brief patronage of Hadleigh came to an end.

MET. BOROUGH OF POPLAR PUBLIC LIBRARIES

THE FAMILY OF BELL, OF ESSEX.

BY H. SOADY BELL.

THERE are several families of Bell scattered over England. The Border may be described as their home, but they are also found in Yorkshire, Lancashire, Norfolk, Gloucestershire, and Essex. The Essex family was apparently an offshoot of the Gloucester branch, the founder being one Edward Bell, of Writtle, Essex, who died there in 1576, and whose arms and pedigree are recorded in the Heralds' visitations of 1558 and 1612. In the pedigree he is stated to be the second son of Wm. Bell, of Newlande, Co. Gloucester, and to have married Margaret, daughter of John Barley, of Stapleford Abbott. By her he had three sons, William, Edward and James, and one daughter, Ann. In his will, proved in the Prerogative Court of Canterbury in 1576, he makes several bequests to his

servants, to the poor, and to Merton College, Oxford, £20; to Brazenose College a smaller sum. His real estate consisted of lands in Newlande, Hewittsfeilde, St. Brewells and Staunton, in the counties of Gloucester and Monmouth, and in Dixon, Monmouthshire.

William, the eldest son, under his father's will inherited the lands, in tail male, subject to his Uncle James's, life interest in a portion, and the widow's life interest in the rest, with remainder to the brothers and sister in tail male in succession, with remainder to William and his heirs. In his will, Edward makes no mention of any real estate in Essex, but refers to 'the manson house of my sonne (William) called Byrles, in the paryshe of Writtle.'

Edward, the second son, under his father's will, inherited some leasehold property in Newlande, Glouc. He appears to have lived in Gloucester, for in his will, proved in the P.C.C. in 1650, he is described as of St. Brewells, Glouc. He left all his property (personal) to his nephew John Gorges. Presumably he left neither widow nor descendants.

James, the third son, under his father's will became possessed of a chattel interest in a farm at 'Shutte in the Co. of Devon.'

Ann, the only daughter, was the first of the four wives of Sir Ferdinando Gorges, of the Province of Maine. She was married to him at St. Margaret's, Westminster, on 24th February, 1589, and had by him two sons, John and Robert, and two daughters, Ellen and Honoria. She died on 26th August, 1620, and was buried at St. Sepulchre's, London.

It may then be presumed that, if this family is still represented in Essex, its members must be sought in the descendants of William, of Byrles, Writtle. The writer has been unable to trace such descendants; but in the *Gentleman's Magazine* of 1789 is an obituary notice of 'Miss Bell, aged 19, at Writtle, only child of Mr. B., of the British Library, Strand.'

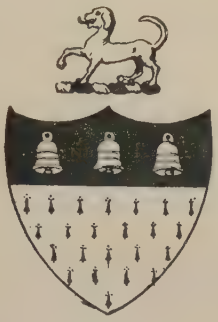
There is a brass in Writtle Church, depicting Edward Bell and Margarett, his wife, with their four children (one of which, the daughter, is now missing). There is also a foot legend and a shield, bearing the arms of Bell, impaling quarterly of nine (3, 3 and 3), 1st Barlee, 2nd Lanway, 3rd Attlee, 4th Belhouse, 5th Pateshall, 6th Waldene, 7th Breton, 8th Norwood, and 9th Peryent.

In Burke's General Armoury there are two entries under Bell (Essex) :

(1) Ermine on a chief sable, an escallop shell between two bells argent. Crest, a Talbot passant ermine.

(2) Ermine on a chief sable, three church bells argent.

No. 1.



No. 2.

The first is to be found in the Heralds' Visitation of 1558 ; while the last the writer has only been able to discover in a coloured sketch of the arms handed down through at least four generations of his own family. The similarity of the coats (see illustration) is sufficient to justify a conjecture that the family which bore the last was descended from that to which the first was granted.

The later family referred to, or some members of it, have lived for the last four generations at Wickford and the neighbourhood, the earliest member being Abraham Bell, who married secondly Ann Milbourn, of Great Bursted, in 1780, at Wickford, by whom he had one son, James Abraham. By his first wife, Sarah, who died in 1777, he had two sons : Abraham and Thomas, and two daughters, Mary (who married George Wyatt, of Ashingdon and Eastwood, in 1779), and Elizabeth (who married James Fairchild, of Rochford and Pitsea, in 1788). Abraham, senior, died in 1801. He had two sisters : Mary, who married Thos. Wright, of Little Bromfords, Wickford (who died in 1767), and Elizabeth, who married John Kirkham.

Of the sons of Abraham Bell :—

(1) Abraham, jun., inherited some freeholds in Nevendon and Basildon from his father. The writer has been unable to trace his descendants ; but finds in an *Essex Directory* of 1848 that an Abraham Bell was a farmer at Corringham.

(2) Thomas, of Wickford, married Sarah Archer in 1801, and died in 1835, leaving three daughters and one son :

Thomas, who married Harriet Elizabeth Abrey, of Chelmsford, and died in 1895. He owned the freehold of Beeches, Wickford, and lived there, having built the greater part of the house which stands to-day. (Beeches derives its name from the family of Beche, which is believed to have formerly lived there.) He had four sons—Thomas Best (who married Mary Soady in 1879, and had three sons and three daughters), Henry Abrey (died 1878), Walter (died s.p.), and Edwin Raynham—and two daughters, Harriet Sarah (who married Robert Norton Stevens, of Woodham Hall, Surrey) and Lucy Archer—all born at Wickford.

(3) James Abraham lived at Great Baddow. He had two sons, Jas. Wickham and Charles Alfred, and one daughter, who married — Simpson. Charles Alfred married May Bodle, and had three sons and two daughters—(1) James Alfred (who married Ellen C. Thorby, and had a son Bernard Alfred and a daughter Rosa Gertrude, who married Chas. J. Parris); (2) Charles, who married Hannah Tenant, and had one daughter, Lillian; (3) Richard, who married Fanny Stundt and had two sons, Maurice and Walter, and two daughters; (4) Mary Kirkham, who married Philip Parris; and (5) Elizabeth, who married G. Henry Aubrey, of Chelmsford.

From some old Essex Poll Books, it appears that a Levy Bell and a Giles Bell owned freeholds in Wickford in 1768. At Sible Hedingham, from 1763 to 1848, a family of Bell owned freeholds, the Christian names being Joseph, sen., Joseph, jun., George and Henry. The name is found in various parts of the county, but not continuously for any long period in any one place.

From the Wickford Parish Registers it would seem that the family did not settle in that parish till the early part of the 18th century, no mention of the name being found before 1705, when a Jane Bell was buried. There were Bells in Essex, contemporaries of Edward Bell, of the 16th century, but their existence is only learnt from their wills proved in the P.C.C.

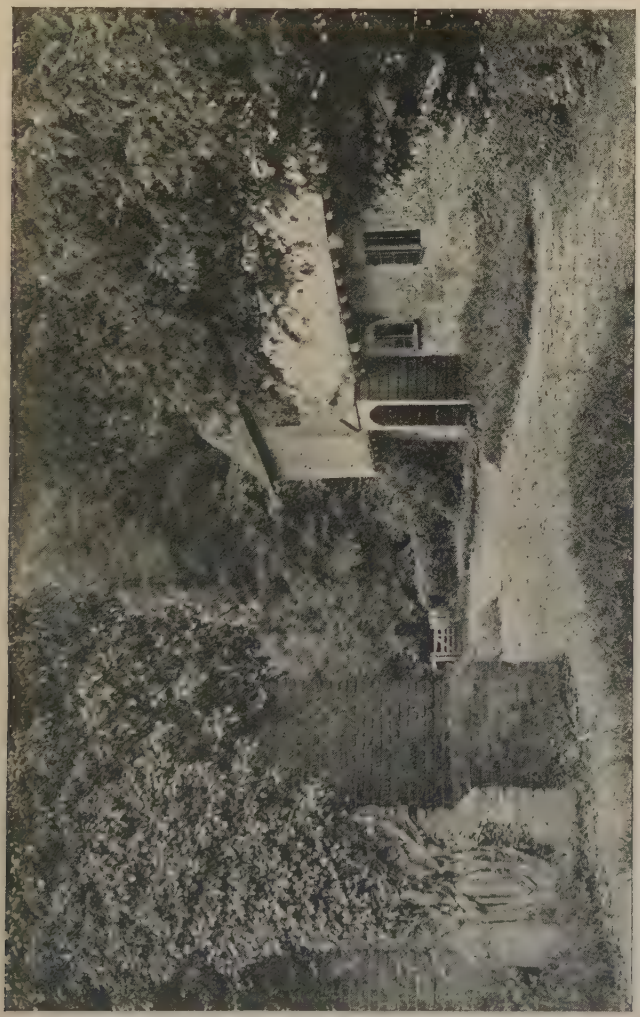
MET. BOROUGH OF POPLAR PUBLIC LIBRARIES

THE CHURCHYARD COTTAGE AT THEYDON GARNON.

BY HENRY HAINES COLLETT.

AMONG the relics of bygone days which have, so far, withstood the onslaught of time and the violation of man, and which survive as concrete evidence of ancient customs and habitations, there are few structures more interesting to the student of ecclesiastical history than those known as 'clergy houses,' an excellent specimen of which is situated in the churchyard of Theydon Garnon.

The origin of these cottages (of which a few other examples survive, notably that adjoining the church at Alfriston, Sussex) is said to have been for the use of a non-resident priest in pre-



[*Epping.*

CHURCHYARD COTTAGE, THEYDON GARNON.

Photo by A. T. Davis.]

Reformation days, and the parvise, or chamber over the church porch, found in many parishes, in which is often a fireplace, was used for the same purpose. Ancient rectory houses also, more or

less restored, are fairly common. The services in the church of Theydon Garnon were conducted by the help of the monastic clergy of the Abbey of Waltham, about seven miles distant, in common with other churches around, notably that of All Saints', Epping, and St. Andrew's, North Weald, and the visiting priest used to sleep in the Churchyard Cottage. The visiting monks, however, were not wholly responsible for the service, for there is, within the chancel of the church, a fine brass to one William Kyrkeby, rector, who belonged to the secular order of priests; also at the commencement of the Fourteenth Century we find that Richard de Teye was in possession of all rectorial rights.

The interesting old lath and plastered cottage we are now describing is situated in the churchyard, facing the west end of the church, within a few feet of the tower. Its age is unknown; but it must be centuries old, and was formerly a one-storied building with particularly low ceilings, and probably had a thatched roof. Later on a second storey was added, the front of which is corbelled out and carried on to the ends of the beams and joists.

The cottage front, facing the churchyard, retains its old plaster covering, with diaper pattern in fair preservation, and the ends and back are covered with tarred deal weather-boarding. The roof is of steep pitch and covered with hand-made tiles, hung with pegs on rent oak laths, and it is ceiled with plaster under the level of the beams. The casement windows were glazed with leaded lights, but most of the glass is broken, and at the back of the building is an aperture through which the monks doled out bread to pilgrims. The general condition of the fabric is sound and, until a few years ago, was occupied as a dwelling-house, but it sadly needs renovation, and a movement has been on foot to raise funds for this purpose.

The Society for the Preservation of Ancient Buildings interested themselves in the matter, and at the instigation of Mr. Thackeray Turner, the secretary, Mr. Weir, an authority on the subject, was asked to make a survey and report. This gentleman estimated that £150 would suffice for the restoration of the cottage, and it is to be hoped that eventually any difficulties which present themselves may be overcome, so that the comparatively small sum of money needed may be raised

towards the preservation of what is to all antiquaries a building of the greatest interest, not so much by reason of its architectural merits, picturesque though it is, as for its association with a past chapter of ecclesiastical history.

SOME OBSOLETE FARM IMPLEMENTS.

BY MILLER CHRISTY.

MET. BOROUGH OF POPLAR PUBLIC LIBRARIES

I.—INTRODUCTION.

FEW of the various objects, implements and appliances which have been used by man in times past are disappearing and being forgotten so rapidly as those used by our grandparents and great-grandparents for domestic and agricultural purposes a century or so ago.

The coins of the ancient Greeks, the dress and customs of the old Romans, the weapons, armour, and architecture of the Middle Ages, have all been studied by many antiquaries and historians, and are fairly well known. Coming down to still later times, we find the art, literature, household furniture, and so forth, of Stuart and Early-Georgian days closely studied and written upon exhaustively. It is only when we come to deal with a period still nearer our own—the Pre-Victorian days of little more than a century ago—that we discover how little is known about many domestic, agricultural, and other appliances then in daily use, and how hard it is to secure really good specimens of them, especially those of minor importance. These things have passed out of use so recently, and are generally of such homely character, that they have not yet become objects of interest, and few persons have made any special study of them. It is often very hard, therefore, to obtain reliable information as to their origin, exact uses, and the dates and causes of their ultimate supersession.

Yet the minor domestic and agricultural appliances belonging to the period in question are worth studying and recording; for very few human appliances which had been in use so long went out of use so suddenly and completely. Some of them (such as the tinder-box and the flail) had been used practically

without change for many centuries—almost from the dawn of civilization. Yet these were superseded and became obsolete with extraordinary suddenness--actually within a generation; almost within a decade. They were swept away by that rapid advance in scientific knowledge which, commencing in the early years of the Nineteenth Century, soon rendered possible the construction of delicate and complicated machinery adapted to almost all domestic, agricultural, and industrial processes. This advance brought also the railway and the steamship, which effected vast improvements in means of travel and transport, and made changes which very rapidly altered all the conditions of human life. It is hardly too much to say that our domestic life to-day differs more radically from that of our grandparents and great-grandparents, who lived only three or four generations ago, than theirs differed from that of their forefathers who lived in Tudor times, ten or twelve generations earlier.

Of the purely domestic appliances used by our grandparents and great-grandparents, a few examples (often classed as 'Bygones') are to be seen in most local museums (as, for instance, at Colchester), though an extended series is rare; but of the agricultural implements and appliances of the same period, it is literally true that no one in this country has made a systematic effort to get together and preserve anything like a series, with the exception of the late General Pitt-Rivers, in his wonderful village museum at Farnham, in Dorsetshire. No doubt the unwieldy size of most agricultural implements is largely the cause of this; for it is difficult to find sufficient room to house them properly. It is, therefore, time that some effort was made to collect old and obsolete forms of these objects, so that the memory of them may be preserved for the interest and instruction of people of the present day and their descendants. Already it is too late to obtain anything like a complete series; soon it will be almost impossible to obtain even single examples, for they are disappearing very rapidly.

In such matters as this, England—so well to the front in some things—is very far behind many (if not most) other European countries. Nowhere in the kingdom have we anything in any way approaching the extensive 'Folk Museums' which exist at, for instance, Stockholm, Christiania, Copenhagen, Munich, Cologne, Berne and Basle, in which are displayed series of

objects connected with and illustrating the industries, agriculture, and domestic life of their peoples in the past. The need of such a museum in this country is very great. If there is no new Horniman of British birth ready and willing to found an institution of the kind, surely there might be found some American millionaire willing to help in the matter. However valuable public libraries may be, the supply is surely now adequate.

With some of the more interesting of the obsolete domestic appliances belonging to the period indicated, I have dealt elsewhere. Here, my object is to describe certain obsolete agricultural appliances which were in use at the same date.

Looking back, we find that a century or so ago, most farm implements were not made, as they are now, in the factories of regular agricultural implement makers, but each landowner and large farmer was accustomed to have his own farm implements made by the local smith and carpenter, according to some special model which he fancied or had himself designed. They were, in short, 'home-made,' as we say now, when scarcely anything used in the home is home-made. Consequently the number of different models then in everyday use was very large—much larger than now, when all ploughs, harrows, rolls, chaff-cutters, binders and the like are turned out by the thousand from large manufactories. Thus Arthur Young, the well-known Secretary of the Board of Agriculture, writing in 1807, figures and describes* between twenty and thirty different kinds of plough—'that most necessary of all tools,' as he calls it—then in use in the county of Essex alone, as Mr. Western's, Mr. Ruggles', Lord Petre's, Mr. Wakefield's, and so on.

The plough, though it has lost much of its old importance in this country, is not yet obsolete here; but some other agricultural appliances, of, perhaps, equal antiquity (as the sowing-basket, the sowing sheet, the dibble, sickle, flail, barn-fan, and the shaul), have been driven altogether out of every-day use, owing to the introduction of machines (chiefly steam-driven) which perform much more rapidly and thoroughly the same operations. Thus, the flail has been displaced by a steam threshing-machine, the barn-fan and the shaul by a winnowing-machine, the sowing-basket and the dibble by a drill. In what

* *Gen. View of the Agriculture of Essex* (1807).

follows, a few remarks are offered on each of the implements named and its uses, except the flail, which I discuss elsewhere : taking first

II.—THE CHAFF-BOX.

For most of my information in regard to this now obsolete contrivance I am indebted to Mr. Hastings Worrin, of Bourchiers, Little Dunmow, who recently acquired an excellent specimen which he has presented to the Museum at Colchester, where it may now be seen. From it, the photographs (by Mr. F. T. Norris, of Felsted) illustrating these remarks are taken.

Photo by] (FIG. 1). [*F. T. Norris, Felsted.*

AN OLD ESSEX CHAFF-BOX.

A century or so ago, a hand-worked ' chaff-box ' (such as that shown in Fig. 1) was in almost daily use on every large farm, being required for cutting hay and straw into chaff for mixing with the food of horses and cattle. It consisted (as the illustration shows) of a strong wooden trough, about four feet long by one foot broad and one foot deep, open at the top and at both ends, and set on four legs about two feet in height. In this trough the hay or straw intended to be cut into chaff was placed.

The fore end of the trough was strengthened by a facing of iron, and against this worked a large knife, about two feet long, furnished with a handle at the top and affixed at the bottom to a movable crank, which allowed of its being moved up and down with a sawing motion when the contrivance was in use for chaff-cutting. A thick block of wood (partly visible behind the knife in the illustration) was placed over the hay and straw in the trough, right at its front end and close up against the knife. This served to compress and compact the hay or straw in the trough, so that it would cut readily when the knife was thrust downwards upon it. This pressure was applied by placing a foot on, and thus depressing, the pedal seen below the trough, this pedal having attached to it a stout leather strap, the upper end of which was attached to the compression-block, which was thus pulled firmly downwards on to the mass of hay or straw. After a cut, when it was desired to shift the mass of hay or straw forward an inch or so, to allow of another cut, the pressure of the foot was taken off the pedal, thus relaxing the downward pull on the strap, when at once pedal, strap and compression-block were all raised an inch or two by the reflex action of the two bowed springy poles, or sticks (usually of hazel), which are seen affixed to the sides of the trough and projecting above its top, their forward ends reaching just over the compression-block, to which they are attached by means of strings, wires, or straps. The raising of the compression-block allowed of the whole mass of hay or straw being pushed forward as far as required. This was done by means of a short-handled fork, having four short tines, which was held in the left hand of the man operating the chaff-box. In the photograph, the fork is shown resting on the top of the hay or straw in the trough; but, unfortunately, only a part of its handle is visible.

The operation of cutting chaff by means of the chaff-box is shown in the second photograph (Fig. 2). The operator took his stand beside the trough, with his right foot on a low wooden stool and his left on the pedal, with his right hand he grasped the handle of the knife, and with his left the handle of the fork. Being thus ready to proceed, he drew the knife up to its highest position; then he thrust the fork into the mass of hay or straw, pushing this just so far forward that its forepart projected slightly beyond the front end of the trough and beneath the

cutting-edge of the knife; next, he depressed the pedal by means of his foot, so that the strap connecting the pedal and the compression-block drew the latter down firmly upon the mass of hay or straw, thus compressing and compacting it; finally, he gave a strong downward thrust of the knife, cutting off a length

Photo by] (FIG. 2) [*F. T. Norris, Felsted.*

METHOD OF CUTTING CHAFF WITH THE OLD-FASHIONED CHAFF-BOX.

of chaff an inch or so long, which fell upon the ground, and the operation was completed. Proceeding, the operator drew up his knife again; took the pressure of his foot off the pedal, allowing the two springy poles to raise the compression-block; pushed forward the mass of hay or straw, with the aid of the fork, so that a fresh length projected; compressed the mass by

depressing the pedal ; and, finally, made another downward stroke with the knife, cutting off another length of chaff. This operation was repeated, of course, again and again, as fast as the operator could perform it. An expert was able to make, perhaps, fifteen or twenty cuts with the knife per minute. The photograph represents Mr. John Owers, of Brown's Farm, Little Dunmow—a fine specimen of an old-time Essex yeoman, and, until recently, the owner of the particular chaff-box illustrated—engaged in cutting chaff. It will be seen that, the pressure being on the pedal, the hay or straw is under compression and that the knife is in the middle of a cut.

One may infer from Arthur Young's words, quoted hereafter, that the operation of chaff-cutting was far from easy and that the operator had to acquire considerable knack before he could perform it both effectively and rapidly ; but no doubt much practice brought skill and speed, as usual. It appears that chaff-cutting formed a separate trade, though those who followed it were usually thatchers also. They used to go about from farm to farm, carrying the chaff-box (which was not very heavy) on their backs, and working wherever their labour was in request. My uncle, Mr. David Christy, of Patching Hall, Broomfield (where he was born in 1823), tells me that he can perfectly well remember and has employed these peripatetic chaff-cutters.

The chaff-box was driven out of use by the introduction of the more effective chaff-cutting machine, driven at first by hand and, later, often by steam-power. This retains the form of the earlier implement, so far as the trough and the legs upon which it stands are concerned ; but the compression of the hay or straw whilst being cut into chaff is effected much more simply by passing it between two rollers ; and the cutting of it into chaff is accomplished, not by means of a large straight knife moving up and down with a sawing motion, but by two or more semi-lunar knives affixed to the spokes of a revolving iron wheel.

The hand-driven chaff-cutting machine may still be seen, of course, in every gentleman's stable : that driven by steam is used constantly on every large farm. The first had come into use, apparently, by the beginning of the Eighteenth Century. Arthur Young, writing as long ago as 1805, says :—*

* *The Farmer's Calendar*, p. 11 (1805).

The number of engines [*i.e.*, contrivances] which have, of late years, been invented for cutting hay and straw into chaff (most of which execute their work sufficiently well) leaves no farmer in the kingdom under the necessity of using the common chaff-box, [which can be] worked by those only who have acquired the art of using it and who usually make much greater earnings than the common pay *per diem*.

Yet the old chaff-box continued to be used occasionally in Essex (and, doubtless, elsewhere) until much later, and there are many people still under sixty years of age who can recall seeing it in use on farms in this county. The last example in Essex was probably that which Mr. Hastings Worrin has just acquired and presented to the Museum at Colchester. Mr. Owers, the late owner, continued to use it within this century; and, about six winters ago, he cut with his own hand and sold four tons of chaff, beside what he used for feeding his own farm-stock. He managed, he says, to cut from twenty to twenty-five 'fans' full in a day.* It may be doubted whether any other chaff-box was worked at so late a date, and it is practically certain that none is now in use in this county. Only a week or two ago, however, I saw, on a blacksmith's scrap-heap at Black Notley, a rusty knife which had once formed part of one.

(*To be continued.*)

MET. BOROUGH OF PUBLIC LIBRARIES POPLAR

MERSEA ISLAND.

BY GEORGE BIDDELL.

IN the *Essex Review* for October last, a correspondent asks for information about the fort which once existed in Mersea (*E.R.*, vol. xvi., p. 204).

There was a blockhouse on the south-eastern extremity of the island for many years, at or near the place now known as Mersea Stone. This blockhouse is marked on three maps of Essex of the 17th century, which are in my possession. The estuary of the Colne was also guarded on the opposite or eastern shore by a fort standing on or near the site of the farmhouse in the parish of St. Osyth, which now bears the name of Block-house Wick. Our ancestors appear to have been alive to the danger of leaving this river open to their enemies, thus allowing them to swoop in upon the wealthy town of Colchester and the great high road leading from it to the Metropolis; and when one

* For an account of the barn-fan, see the succeeding portion of this article.

considers the narrowness of the navigable channel of the Colne, and the fact that ships in olden time carried no protective armour, one may well conclude that these two blockhouses, if kept well manned and armed, provided an effective defence. The date of their construction is not certainly known, but it may, with good probability, be assigned to the reign of Henry VIII. This monarch paid special attention to the defences of the south-eastern coast of the kingdom, and it was in his time that a blockhouse was built at Tilbury, which was afterwards superseded by Tilbury Fort.

The following extracts from *Acts of the Privy Council of England, new ser.*, ed. John Roche Dasent, under the direction of the Master of the Rolls, are of interest in this matter. With reference to the first extract it should be remembered that in 1545 the French were preparing to make a descent upon the English coast in retaliation for the invasion of France, which Henry and his ally, the Emperor Charles, had made in the preceding year.

At a meeting of the Council on 12th May 1545:—

'Sir Thomas Darcy had two letters, one to the Erle of Oxford, signefieng thappointement of them two to have thordre of the Kinges Majesties subjectes of the Countie of Essex, certeyne hundredes allotted unto the sayd Sir Thomas for defence of the coste, and therle to back him with the power of the Shire, thother to the Lord Wentworth of the same tenour for the Shire of Suffolk.'

At a meeting on 23rd May 1546:—

'A warraunte to Thomas Fleming, Deputie of thordenance, to deliver to Sir Thomas Darcy oone last of pouldre for the Blockehouses of Colne and other[s] in Essex.'

Item; 'a warraunte to Sir John Williams, Treasourour, &c., for xx markes in preste to the said Mr. Darcy for the stocking of gonnes and other things there.'

Sir T. Darcy probably knew the coast well, as he was a native of Essex and dwelt near the sea, at St. Osyth Priory. Presumably also he was skilled in matters relating to artillery, being at the date of these extracts, Master of the Ordnance.

At a meeting on 28th March 1550:—

'Letters to Mr. Chester, Receyvour of ———, to pay to William Pascall, now Captain of the Myddle Bulwerk at Harwiche, from tyme to tyme the wages which William Bood, late Capitein there, had, and to be payd the same from the Feast of the Annuncyacion of Our Lady last past.

Like letters to the said Chester for John Burley, now appointed Captein of Marsey Bulwerk, wherof Raf Bucket was late Capitain.

Also like letters to the said Chester for John Hocket, now appointed Capitain of the Blockhowse of St. Osies, whereof John Cawson was lately Capitain.'

The threatened attack by the French in the reign of Henry VIII. came to nothing, and another century appears to have passed away before Mersea Fort became involved in any warlike operations. Early in June 1648, the Earl of Norwich, Lord Capel, and other Cavaliers made a dash into Essex with forces which they had hastily collected, and were followed by Lord Fairfax and a Parliamentarian army in hot pursuit. Arrived at Colchester, the Royalists forced an entrance into the town, and were soon straitly besieged by their enemies. The possession of the waterway of the Colne was a matter of primary importance to both sides. Apparently, Mersea Fort was held by a garrison of Royalists, and was of sufficient strength to keep out intruders, for Captain Peacock and other commanders of some Parliamentarian vessels, which were lying off Harwich, sent word to Fairfax that they would come into the Colne and co-operate with him, if they were informed that this fort was in his possession. Fairfax lost no time in despatching a force to take the fort, and they succeeded immediately in their attempt. It appears, however, that just before this took place, two ships laden with corn, and carrying several gentlemen and 56 men, who were coming to join the Royalists, had sailed over from the Kentish coast, and entered the river. These ships arrived on the 17th June. The men whom they brought landed at once, and went up to Colchester, and the same day, with great dispatch, most of the corn was unloaded into hoys and taken up to the town. The commanders of the ships at Harwich, having been apprised by Fairfax that he had got possession of the fort, sailed round to the Colne the next day and captured the two ships, with the corn which still remained in them. As regards the armament of the fort when it fell into the hands of the Parliamentarians, it may be interesting to note that it comprised two culverins, two sacres (or sakers), and a drake. The culverins were large pieces of ordnance throwing shot which probably weighed from 15 to 20 pounds; the sacres had a bore of several inches, and fired shot weighing five or six pounds; and the drake was presumably a smaller gun.

This fort appears to have been maintained in a more or less efficient condition during the naval wars which were waged between the English and Dutch in the time of the Commonwealth and the reign of Charles II., and then to have been

allowed to fall into neglect and decay. In the visits which I have made to Mersea I have not observed any ruins of it, and a gentleman who knows the island well informs me that he is not aware that any remains of it are now visible. It is quite possible, however, that a careful examination of the ground at the spot known as Mersea Stone, might reveal traces of its site.

With regard to the petition of Art. Ockley to which Miss Fell Smith refers, it appears from p. 351 of *Annals of Evangelical Nonconformity in the County of Essex*, by T. W. Davids, that Walter Okeley obtained the living of West Mersea in 1654. It is stated of him that he 'could not so much as write.' His predecessor, John Woolhouse, had been deprived of the living on a charge of all manner of wickedness, ending with the complaint that he had 'expressed great malignancy against the Parliament.' In connection with these statements, however, one should bear in mind that in the great struggle between King and Parliament, the contending parties were prone to characterise in very strong terms the ministers belonging to the ranks of their opponents.

MET. BOROUGH OF POPLAR PUBLIC LIBRARIES

AN ESSEX ANTIQUARY.

MR. Isaac Chalkley Gould, F.S.A., who died at his residence, Trapp's Hill House, Loughton, on 11th October, in his sixty-second year, was a distinguished archæologist and antiquary, who took a special and deep interest in all that related to his own county.

Mr. Gould came of an old Essex family, being the second son (born 16 September 1845) of the late Mr. George Gould, of Trapp's Hill House. In early life, he became associated with the firm of E. Marlborough and Co., wholesale news-agents (founded soon after the middle of the Eighteenth Century), of the Old Bailey, and he remained a member of it many years. Later, he founded the wholesale-stationery firm of Marlborough, Gould, and Co. (an off-shoot of the above), as well as the Library Supply Company.

Like many of the old school of antiquaries, he spent much of his leisure time in walking over the country, in congenial

company, following high-ways, bye-ways, and field-paths. In this way, he acquired an intimate personal knowledge of the history, topography and physical features of the county of Essex which was, we believe, quite unrivalled. He was also a diligent collector of books relating to the county, his collection being one of the most extensive in existence. He possessed an exceptionally retentive memory, and this, together with his extraordinary local knowledge and his fine library of local books, fostered in him a deep-rooted affection for his native county and

MR. I. CHALKLEY GOULD, OF LOUGHTON (DIED 1907).

everything that concerns it—an affection which far exceeded a mere antiquarian interest in its history and topography.

In early life, he wrote and published little; but from the eighties onwards, he began to draw upon and utilize his large store of accumulated knowledge, and thenceforth, up to the time of his death, he was a frequent contributor of notes and articles to archæological publications—especially the *Transactions of the Essex Archæological Society*, the *Essex Naturalist*, the *Essex Review* (of which he was one of the proprietors), the *Journal of the British Archæological Association*, and the Essex volumes of the *Victoria History of the Counties of England*.

Apart from Essex, his chief interests lay in the study of Ancient Defensive Earthworks, of all kinds, to which he had devoted many years. It is not too much to say that, on this subject, he was recognised as the leading authority in this country, and that he leaves behind him no one as yet quite competent adequately to fill his place. On this subject, his opinion and advice were sought constantly by archæologists residing in all parts of the United Kingdom. His assistance was gladly secured by the Editors of the *Victoria History*, for whom he wrote the articles on Earthworks appearing in the volumes for Essex, Durham, Herefordshire and Kent. He revised and gave considerable help in connection with the articles on the Earthworks of the counties of Derby, Devon, Hertford, Lancaster, Leicester, Northampton, Oxford, and Shropshire. He was also largely instrumental in the formation of the Committee of the Society of Antiquaries 'For Recording Ancient Earthworks and Fortified Enclosures,' in the work of which he took so hearty an interest that for some years he acted as its Honorary Secretary and drew up the annual reports.

Many persons will remember the very active part he took, in the beginning of 1905, in organizing resistance to the plundering designs of Hertfordshire and Cambridgeshire, which counties sought to annex certain Essex parishes lying adjacent to their borders. He spared no effort on this occasion, speaking frequently at meetings and writing extensively in the public press, and his success in rousing the indignation of Essex men, and thus preserving inviolate the county boundaries as they had existed almost from the dawn of history, was ever after a matter of satisfaction to himself and others.

To a suggestion of Mr. Gould was due the formation, in the spring of 1906, of the Committee now engaged in exploring the mysterious salting-mounds, known as 'Red-hills,' found so abundantly on the marshes of the Essex coast. This body, formed originally as a joint-committee of the Essex Archæological Society and the Essex Field Club, was subsequently enlarged and now receives the support of the Society of Antiquaries and other leading English Archæological Societies. At its first meeting, it elected Mr. Gould as Chairman.

Beside being a Fellow of the Society of Antiquaries (elected 1st March 1906), Mr. Gould was a Vice-President of the Essex

Field Club and of the British Archæological Association, as well as member of the Council of the Essex Archæological Society (elected 29th February 1892).

He was of a sociable, yet retiring disposition, always ready to defer to the views of others, yet able to express by a passing remark the strong opinion and cogent reasoning of the scholar. Amid all his archæological work and study, he was an omnivorous general reader, with a special admiration for the works of George Borrow, whom he was never tired of quoting.

Of late years, serious ill-health greatly restricted the number of Mr. Gould's excursions about the county, but happy indeed was he who had his company on one of these, and could draw upon his ample fund of local knowledge. It was not till the beginning of the present year that he became a confirmed invalid, confined almost entirely to the house. Even then he never wavered in his work and studies, labouring almost to the end to complete his article on the Earthworks of Hertfordshire for the Victoria History, dictating when no longer able to write. When even that became impossible, he resigned himself patiently and bravely to the inevitable end. Almost in his last hours, he derived pleasure from having read to him an admirable article in the *Spectator* describing appreciatively the simple pastoral beauty of Essex (see *E.R.*, October 1907, vol. xvi., p. 215).

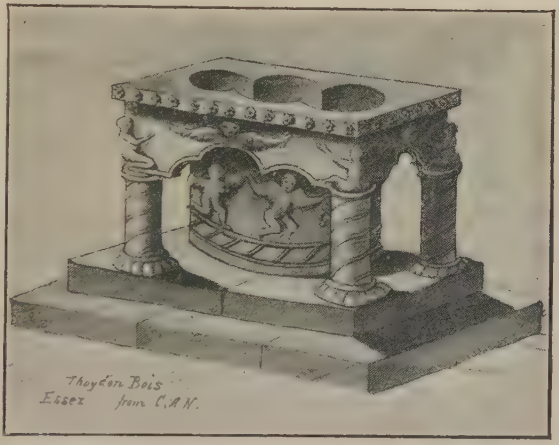
The funeral service, at Loughton Parish Church, on 16th October, was attended by representatives of most of the Societies with which he was connected, and by a large gathering of friends and neighbours. By his own wish, his body was cremated. The photograph from which the accompanying portrait has been reproduced is believed to be the only one of him in existence.

SUPPOSED OLD FONT OF THEYDON BOIS, ESSEX.

BY ARTHUR A. WEST.

THE original drawing, of which a reduced copy is given below, was found in a portfolio of drawings and sketches of church fonts, made about the years 1840 to 1850. This one is marked as being the font of Theydon Bois, but whether correctly or not is uncertain.

The old church of Theydon Bois is described by Morant as 'of one pace with the chancel, and tiled.' There is a view of it in Ogborne's *History of Essex*. It may have been the actual church which was given by William de Bosco to the priory of Saint Bartholomew, West Smithfield, and confirmed by King Henry III. by charter, 15th June 1253. It stood on the road to Waltham Abbey, about half a mile north of Abridge. Being very small, and remote from the centre of population, it was decided in 1842 to build another church in a more central position near Theydon Green, about a mile and a half from the old site, towards Waltham Abbey.



The new church was begun in July 1843, and consecrated the 5th June 1844. Owing chiefly to defective foundations it soon showed signs of failure. Eventually it had to be pulled down, when the present church was erected in its place, and finished in January 1851. To assist in raising the necessary funds, the old church was sold for £78, and pulled down, in or a little before 1847. Probably the old font went at the same time. It would be interesting to discover whether any part of it is now in existence, and whether this drawing is correctly described as of Theydon Bois. The present font is quite modern.

Some of the peculiarities in this old font are the quatrefoiled shape of the bowl; the rosettes along the edge of the top slab; the small nude figure at each angle; and the cherub, or winged head over the trefoiled arch on each of the four sides. Also the winged figures on the drum. The little columns at the angles, with spiral fluting, were doubtless separate stones.

Possibly some reader of the *Essex Review* may be able to throw light on the subject.

MET. BOROUGH OF POPLAR PUBLIC LIBRARIES

THE ESSEX REVIEW, OUR HISTORY AND PROGRESS.

THE executive body of the Essex Review Limited having now been at work in their conduct of the Magazine for five years, it is thought that some account of progress may be interesting to subscribers and readers of the *Review*, as well as to shareholders.

As will be known to most, the *Essex Review* was founded in 1892 by Mr. Edmund Durrant, of Chelmsford, its object being 'to gather up into one publication all matters of permanent interest relating to the prosperity, history, and literature of our county. . . to conserve all materials for county history. . . and to serve generally as a record of contemporary history.' We quote from the Editorial Preface to the first volume, which has now become so scarce that its value is greatly enhanced. Under the joint editorship of Mr. Edward A. Fitch and W. H. Dalton for two years, the publication was carried on by Mr. Fitch alone until the end of 1897, when he was joined by Miss C. Fell Smith, upon whom, as county work has claimed his services more and more, an increasing share of the editorship has fallen. In 1902, shortly after Mr. Edmund Durrant's death, when it seemed as if the magazine might collapse, it was resolved by a few interested subscribers to form a small Limited Company to purchase the magazine from Mrs. Durrant, and ensure, if possible, its future maintenance. By this time its value in the county was well recognised by a certain elect number, but it did not receive, and never has received, the support such an unique organ deserves.

Fifty-five shares of £10 each were issued, and quickly subscribed for by 32 men and women who had the best interests of the county at heart, most of whom, certainly, had small hope of deriving any pecuniary gain. Initial expenses and lack of support heavily handicapped the Company for three years. At the end of 1904, it became a question whether the concern should be wound up, or drastic economies introduced and a further effort be made to secure support. The last course was tried first, and with it came the turn in fortunes. The shareholders will feel amply repaid for their time of waiting, if present hopes are realised. But it still remains for all who value the

Review to support it by contributing notes and articles of interest, and by soliciting fresh subscribers.

The ordinary general meeting for 1907 was held by the kindness of the Chairman, at the offices of the Essex County Council, 1, Broad Street Place, on 9th December, the Bishop of Barking in the chair. The audited accounts for 1905-6 were examined, and the following Report was unanimously adopted.

REPORT, 1907.

In reporting generally to the shareholders on the year's work, the Directors consider they have a decidedly hopeful outlook to place before them. The trading account for the year 1904 showed a loss of £55 0s. 11d., but the trading accounts for the two following years, 1905-6, showed a profit of £54 12s. 3d. on the two years. The directors may hope, therefore, with strict economy and a lively attention to the conduct of the *Review*, that the corner of the ways is at last turned.

The Balance Sheet now shows a sum of £208 11s. 7d. on the wrong side, so that it must probably still be some years before a dividend can be declared. But the Directors hope, if the increased circulation of the last three years continues, a dividend may be even nearer than at present can be safely anticipated. They are, however, much hampered in the working of the magazine by the very large amount of subscriptions in arrear.

Since its incorporation, the company has lost seven valuable members and founders; their shares, with one exception, are held by their representatives, and none of the original shareholders has parted with his holding except through death.

For the information of new subscribers, we may add that the Board of Directors is composed of the same five original members elected in 1902, viz.:

Mr. W. Gurney Benham,
Mr. Fred. Chancellor,
Mr. Miller Christy,
Mr. Edward A. Fitch, and
The Bishop of Barking, Chairman.

Miss C. Fell Smith has always acted as Secretary.

NOTES OF THE QUARTER.

New Registers for the County.

The figures of the new voting register for 1908 show an increase in all divisions, and are given by the Clerk of the Peace for the county as under :—

Division.	Total number of names.	Increase.	Parliamentary Electors.	Increase.
Southern or Romford	53,404	1,792	49 065	1,424
South-Western or Walthamstow	44,138	1,656	39,285	1,459
South-Eastern	25,418	1,305	22,732	1,169
North Eastern or Harwich	16,763	171	13,741	176
Mid or Chelmsford	14,981	251	12,539	254
Eastern or Maldon	14,326	360	11,168	255
Western or Epping.....	14,148	195	11,812	155
Northern or Saffron Walden	10,665	36	8,911	11
Totals.....	193,843	5,766	169,253	4,903

Master Masonic Lodge.

A Masonic Lodge to be called the Essex Masters Lodge, 3256, was consecrated on 27th November at Colchester. The Provincial Grand Master, Colonel Right Hon. Mark Lockwood, M.P., the Deputy Provincial Grand Master, Dr. J. H. Salter, the Very Worshipful Chaplain (Bishop of Barking), and many others were present. The Lodge was dedicated and founders' jewels presented.

Colchester Hospital.

The corner stone of the new children's ward was laid on 27th November with Masonic rites. Three silver trowels were presented to the stone layers —Colonel Mark Lockwood, Mrs. Deacon, of Halstead, and Mr. W. Hewitt, of Dedham. The Provincial Grand Chaplain, Bishop of Barking, offered prayer. The Chairman of the Hospital Committee, Colonel Tyssen Holroyd, proposed thanks to the Provincial Grand Master and the other Freemasons, who contributed handsome offerings on the stone.

River Pollution.

A Conference Meeting, convened under the auspices of the Essex Field Club, was held in the Municipal Technical Institute, Stratford, on 14th Dec. 1907, the Mayor of West Ham (Councillor J. R. Moore-Smith, J.P.) in the chair at the beginning, and subsequently the president of the Essex Field Club (Mr. Miller Christy, F.L.S.), to consider the subject of 'River Pollution from the Naturalist's Point of View.' There were present naturalists, geologists, meteorologists, manufacturers, sanitary officers, and representatives of Water Boards and of County and Borough Councils. The subject was introduced by Professor R. Meldola, F.R.S. (past-president of the Chemical Society). Among the speakers were Mr. E. B. Barnard, M.P. (chairman, Works Committee, London Water Board), Mr. David Howard, J.P., F.C.S. (past-president, Society of Chemical Industry), Mr. Kent (Bishop Stortford Urban District Council), Dr. Parsons (Local Government Board), Sir Alexander Pedler, K.C.I.E., F.R.S. (hon. secretary, British Science Guild), Mr. J. Brook Pike (chemical expert, London County Council), Professor Sir William Ramsay, K.C.B., F.R.S. (president, Chemical Society, and chairman, Royal Commission on Sewage Disposal), Dr. Sanders (medical officer of health, County Borough of West Ham), Dr. Sommerville (lecturer on Public Health, King's College, London), Mr. J. C. Thresh, M.D., D.Sc. (Medical Officer of Health, Essex County Council), and Mr. J. Mackworth Wood, C.E.

The following resolution was moved by Sir Alexander Pedler, F.R.S., seconded by Mr. E. B. Barnard, M.P., carried unanimously, and ordered to be transmitted to the Local Government Board and the British Science Guild :—

'That this meeting, having heard the expert testimony of many qualified speakers interested in the improvement of the state of our rivers, streams and waterways, is of opinion that legislative action is urgently needed, and would regard with satisfaction the creation of a Central Authority under Government for dealing with the general question of Water Supply throughout the Kingdom, as well as with the disposal of Sewage and of Effluents from Factories; such Central Authority to be given power to apportion expenditure on sewage treatment, or other necessary work of purification, amongst the communities deriving benefit from such expenditure.'

Church Restorations, &c.

BLACKMORE.—On Oct. 22 a service was held by the Bishop of Barking to dedicate the new east wall and window which have been added to the church by an anonymous donor. The window is of three lights, representing in the centre the Crucifixion, in the north light the holy women, in the south St. John, Joseph of Arimathea, and the centurion. The oak screen has also been carried further across the aisles, forming a side-chapel, where daily service is held. This is the fourth stage of the complete restoration which has been carried out in the church under the direction of Mr. Chancellor during recent years. The dedication service was conducted by the vicar, Rev. W. Layton Petrie, a processional hymn was sung, and a confirmation service was afterwards held by the Bishop.

PLAISTOW.—Another new church has been erected in Hermit Road, making the 26th erected in the borough of West Ham since 1845. It is dedicated to St. Matthias, and was consecrated recently by the Bishop of St. Albans.

LAINDON HILLS.—A Mission Hall and Church Institute have been erected on the station side of the Hills, the rapid growth of that portion of the parish making this a very necessary adjunct to St. Mary's parish church. The nucleus of the fund was a legacy by the late rector, Rev. T. Robinson, a site was given by Mr. Isaac Levy, and other gifts have been received. The Hall was formally opened and dedicated by the Bishop of Barking at an evening service on 20th November, a social reception having been held in the afternoon by the rector, Rev. Gordon F. H. Llewellyn.

EPPING.—A new tower is about to be added to the church of St. John Baptist, Epping, as the gift of Mr. E. J. Wythes, J.P., of Copped Hall, The foundation stone was laid by Mrs. Wythes on Dec. 4. It bears the following inscription:—

Ad Gloriam Majorem Dei. The foundation stone of this tower, the gift of E. J. Wythes, of Copped Hall, erected 1907-8, was laid by Aline Wythes on Dec. 4, 1907. "A city set on a hill cannot be hid."

A service was afterwards held in the church, when an address was given by the Bishop of Colchester.

TENDRING.—A new peal of six bells has been added to the church, and was dedicated on 10 Dec. by the Bishop of St.

Albans. The four old bells, dated 1627(2), 1618, 1624 (see *E.R.* vi., 47), being worn out, were melted down and re-cast. The Cardinall family; the churchwardens, F. W. Clarke and W. Marvin Tricker; the rector, Rev, Arnold Page, and his wife, his brothers and sisters, have all contributed largely to the bells, and other restorations in the church have been joined in by almost every household in the parish, including many Wesleyans.

Great Burstead.—St. Mary's Church, having been renovated, was reopened for service and dedicated on Dec. 12 by the Bishop of the diocese. The fine oak cross-beams of the roof have been laid bare, the oak porch has been scraped and oiled, and the tiling of the exterior attended to. A short form of evensong was read by the Vicar, Rev. J. Denton Hart, and the Bishop preached the sermon, in which he referred to the tablet inscribed with names of vicars for 600 years. The choir was augmented by an orchestra of strings, and the musical part of the service was thoroughly well carried out.

Colchester.—St. Giles' Church was re-opened after rebuilding and restoration on Dec. 19, when the Mayor and Corporation attended in state, and the Bishop of Colchester was the preacher. The Lucas Chapel has been completely restored to its original condition by gifts from the Lucas family and others. Here the Royalists, Sir Charles Lucas and Sir George Lisle, were interred, after being shot in the Castle bailey by the Parliamentarians, on the surrender of the town at the close of the siege in 1648.

The Rev. E. N. Powell, formerly a curate at Chelmsford, and recently vicar of St. Stephen's, Upton Park, has been nominated Bishop of Mashonaland, and on 17 Dec. was presented by the clergy and congregation of St. Stephen's with a handsome episcopal ring, a pectoral gold cross, a silver pastoral staff and other gifts. The presentation was made by the Bishop of Colchester.

On 18 Dec. deputations from seven Essex towns claiming to be the site of the new Cathedral waited upon the Executive Committee of the Essex Bishopric Fund at the Church House, Westminster. The Bishop of St. Albans presided. The deputations were headed as follows:—Colchester, the Mayor, Mr. Wilson Marriage; Chelmsford, Canon Lake; Barking, Rev. J. W. Eisdell, vicar; West Ham, the Mayor and Mr. C. H. G.

Masterman, M.P.; Thaxted, Rev. L. S. Westall, vicar, Mr. A. P. Humphrey, and Rev. H. Symonds; Woodford, Mr. Andrew Johnston; West Ham, Sir T. Fowell Buxton. The hearing occupied five hours. A sub-committee consisting of the Bishop of St. Albans, Canon the Hon. Kenneth Gibbs, and the Hon. Richard Strutt, was afterwards appointed to prepare a statement setting out the claims of each, which is to be circulated in every parish in the county before Jan. 10, the Committee to meet again on Feb. 10, to receive replies.

Obituaries.

The Rev. Henry Mawson Milligan, vicar of Althorne and rector of Creeksea, died on 6th October in his ninetieth year. He was the oldest incumbent in the county, and had held the joint benefices since 1861. He was born in London on 6th November 1817, educated at Uxbridge, Eton, and St. Catherine's College, Cambridge, where he graduated in 1844. He was ordained in 1846, and held his first curacies in Warwickshire and Staffordshire. In 1848 he was appointed Headmaster of the Grammar School at Sutton Valence, Kent, belonging to the Worshipful Company of Cloth-workers, where he remained fourteen years before coming to Althorne. Both the parish churches in his living were restored during his incumbency, the Vicarage of Althorne was built, and a couple of years ago he opened a new parish room in Althorne. He had been an invalid for nearly two years, and died peacefully in his sleep He was twice married and leaves a widow and five young children. The funeral took place at Althorne on 12 October, the vicar of Tillingham, Rev. W. C. Miller, conducting the service.

Mr. William Rome, F.S.A., J.P., C.C., died on 20th October, at his residence, Creeksea Place, Burnham-on-Crouch, in his 65th year. A son of Mr. Andrew Rome, an Inspector in the Essex Constabulary, he was born at Burnham in 1842, attended the National School there, and entered the business of Sweetings, fishmongers in the city, as quite a lad. He rose to be senior partner in the firm, and for 25 years was a member of the Corporation of the City of London, Chairman of many of its Committees, and one of the initiators in the matter of the Guildhall Art Gallery Exhibitions. He qualified as J.P. for Essex in January 1903, and in 1904 was elected to represent Southminster on the Essex County Council. He was President of the Essex

Agricultural Show at Southend in 1905, a member of the Kent and Essex Sea Fisheries Committee, Fellow of numerous learned Societies, and a member of the Council of the City and Guilds of London Institute. He restored the old manor house of Creeksea (built in 1569) to much of its original condition, and filled it with valuable antiquities from many parts of the world. Mr. Rome was buried in Burnham Cemetery on 25th October.

Mr. Charles Fitch Kemp, who died on 31st October at his Kentish home, was an Essex man, and during the early part of his life was identified with his native county, although not resident therein. Born on 29th June 1829, at Northwick, Southminster, son of John and Mary Kemp, Mr. Fitch Kemp was educated at Ongar Grammar School, and passed thence to the East India College. Forty-three years ago he took up his residence at Hildenborough, where he acquired an estate, built a house, and became closely connected with the church, the school, institute, and cricket and Rifle Clubs of the village. He was J.P. and D.L. for Kent, president of the County Cricket Club, a true sportsman, a broad-minded Conservative, and an ideal country squire. To Mr. Fitch Kemp, the *Essex Review* owes a debt of hearty gratitude; he took in it a keen interest from the first, became a considerable shareholder when our company was formed, and has generously conducted the annual audit of accounts ever since. He was the head of one of the best known firms of chartered accountants in the city, in which two of his six sons are now partners. Another son is a master at Harrow, and there are six daughters.

The Rev. John Hubert Ware, vicar of East Ham and rural dean of Barking, died on 6th December at Minehead, Somersetshire, in his 45th year. He was a son of the Rev. J. M. Ware, of Ullingswick, Herefordshire, and was elected to a Somerset Scholarship and a Philpott Exhibition at Brasenose College, Oxford, whence he graduated in 1886. He was ordained priest in 1888 by the Bishop of Norwich (Dr. Pelham), becoming curate of Great Yarmouth, of which Archdeacon Donne was then vicar. Lord William Cecil was one of his fellow-curates. In 1892 he moved to Poplar, under the Rev. A. Chandler, now Bishop of Bloemfontein. In 1893, Brasenose College appointed him vicar of East Ham, a parish of 23,000 people. He had been rural dean since 1900.

NOTES AND QUERIES.

Windmills round Little Dunmow.—In connection with articles in the last issue (*E.R.*, xvi., pp. 179-182 and 184-195), treating of the picturesque old Essex windmills, now so nearly obsolete, it may be of interest to record that, about the year 1874 or 1875, one such mill, which stood in the neighbourhood of Sawbridgeworth, was taken down, transported some twelve miles, and re-erected on Throw's Farm in this parish of Little Dunmow.

The workmen engaged in rebuilding the mill were able to see from the top of it no fewer than fourteen other windmills —namely, those at Stebbing (three),* Lindsell,* Rayne, Braintree,* Felstead (Cock Green), Little Canfield,* High Roothing,* Dunmow (Town Mill), Great Easton (Mole-hill Green), Broxted, Little Saling, and Shalford.* Moreover, yet another mill (the fifteenth) existed nearer than most of those named—in Deadman's or Tedman's Lane, Dunmow ; but it happened that this could not be seen.

The mill in question still stands, being worked for the production of meal by Messrs. Hasler and Clapham, of Dunmow ; but of the fourteen others which could be seen from its top, no fewer than *eight* (those marked with an asterisk in the foregoing list) are now down altogether or are no longer working, while another has lost its sails and is worked by a gas engine. Further, not a single one of the whole lot is now engaged in grinding wheat flour.—Hastings Worrin, Bourchiers, Little Dunmow.

Essex Boundaries.—A friend in a distant county asks me whether there exists in Essex 'a really old survey or perambulation, say, at least 200 years old.' On a farm in Castle Camps, Cambs., there is an oak in a peculiar position, which was, according to some papers in the possession of the rector, held in 1730 to be unquestionably the boundary, at the apex of an angle somewhat like this:—$\sqrt{\text{A.}}$ (A. oak tree), between Castle Camps in Cambs. and Bartlow hamlet in Essex. It is not a large tree, nor apparently very old, but my friend desires to find out when and how it first came to be recognised as a bond-mark in the boundary between the two counties. He believes the real boundary between the hamlet of Bartlow and the poor-law parish of Ashdon, of which, *e.g.* for land tax, it forms a part, is

by no means certainly defined, but that this difficulty affects nothing within half-a-mile of the tree he mentions.—ANDREW JOHNSTON, Woodford.

The Quarters of the Roads.—My work takes me about among the rustics of mid-Essex, and teaches me many strange words and expressions. The two about which I write now are well known to all who deal much with rural labourers, but they are ancient and interesting. Among my parishioners is an old man of eighty-four, bedridden from the loss of use of his limbs, but hearty—his normal meal is of bread and cheese and raw onions—and quaint exceedingly. I tell him, I never go to see him without learning something worth learning. Lately, we talked about the state of the roads in old times. We grumble at our roads now, but we of this generation little know what they were sixty years ago. 'Why,' he said, 'I remember Muster F——, when he used to ride here on his donkey from Pleshey, he could touch the quarters with his feet anywhere.' I said, 'What do you mean by the quarters?' 'Why, the quarters of the road, alongside the rakes. There ain't no quarters now, the roads are so flat.' 'What are the rakes?' 'Why, the places where the wheels go.' 'Didn't they ever mend the roads?' 'Mend the roads! they used to put a few stones on out of the fields, and cart sticks out of the hedges and lay 'em in the rakes.' Imagine such a road! In the middle a depression two feet deep, or deeper, in which the horse travelled, on each side an elevation ('quarter'), then the 'rakes' (wheel ruts), two feet deep, and outside the two other 'quarters.'

Here are two good old words. Rake is an old Norse word meaning streak, track, imported into Scotland and Northern England. I wonder how it got here. You have it, I suppose, in Skager Rak, the channel between Southern Norway and Northern Denmark. The north point of Denmark is Skagen, the Scaw we call it. Quarter, in this sense, is defined in the *Oxford Dictionary* as 'one of the four parts into which a road is divided by the horse-track and the wheel-ruts.' The earliest instance given is '1767 A. Young, Lett. to People (1771) I. 445. A road . . . upon which the track may vary, without having quarters a yard high to cross.'—EDWARD GEPP, High Easter Vicarage.

A Maldon Coparcenary.—Maldon's 'Record Book, 1574-1661,' fol. 29, contains a well-stated instance of the complications possible when heritable property became vested in co-heiresses, and of the steps taken to simplify the question of ownership. On the death of John Browne *alias* New, and his wife Margaret, a number of detached properties in Maldon became vested in Grace, wife of Peter Jarvis, yeoman, of Maldon; Margaret, wife of William Burles, yeoman, of Maldon; and Mary, wife of John Pagett, linen-draper, of Maldon, jointly, as co-heiresses. These three, and their husbands, agreed that it was of advantage at once to terminate the coparcenary, by giving to each the individual ownership of one-third of the estate. They chose William Vernon, gentleman, Maldon; John Burles, gentleman, of Little Leighs, ; and John Morrys, woollen-draper, of Maldon, to effect an equitable division. On 20 February 1586-7, these three appeared before the borough court, to state the division they had made, and their method of arriving at it :—

Fyrst, havinge departed, devyded, and sett foorthe the same intoo three severall partes, accordinge to the nombre of the said systers and co-heires, to the good lykynge and contentation of all and everye the said parties (as well of the husbands as of the said wyves), wee did wryte the said three severall partes of all the messuages, lands, etc., in three several scrowes [scrolls], and covered the said scrowes all over with waxe and made them into three lyttyll balls, and put them all into one bonnett in an indifferent [i.e., impartial] man's hande, and ordred that the three systers should take (one after the other) one of the said three balls of waxe in the bonnett, and all such messuages, etc., as were fownde in the scrowe so inclosed within the said ball of waxe, she to have and enjoye the same in severaltie to her, her husband, and the heires of her, in full allowance for her parte of all the lands, etc.

Whereupon, Mary Pagett (beinge the yongest syster and co-heire) accordinge to the auncyent custome of Maldon did choose the first ball of waxe, wherein was wrapped one of the scrowes, in which was conteyned, wrytten, and sett downe, one messuage, with two curtilages, and one garden in St. Peter's parish;

Secondly, Margaret Burles chose one other of the balls of

wax, wherein was wrapped one other of the scrowes in which was conteyned one messuage, with a curtilage, called 'Palmer's,' in St. Peter's parish; and another messuage, with a curtilage and a garden, in St. Mary's parish; and another messuage, with a garden, called 'Collin's,' in St. Peter's parish, and a rent-charge of 6s. 8d. yearly issuing out of a parcel of land called Little Wynterslade, in All Saints' parish.

And, Lastly, Grace Jarvis tooke the thirde and last ball of waxe, wherein was wrapped the thirde scrowe, in which was conteyned a messuage, with a curtilage, and a garden, called 'The Checquer,' in All Saints' parish; and another messuage, with a curtilage, also in All Saints' parish, and the parcel of land (subject to above rent-charge) called Little Wynterslade.

The Court ratified these arrangements and ordered them to be engrossed in its records.—(Rev.) A. Clark, LL.D., Great Leighs.

A Reputed Centenarian.—In the Burials Register of Great Leighs, vol. iii., fol. 39, is the entry:—'1731, July 9th, Peter Wingfield was buried. N.B.—He was 71 years of age, and left behind him his mother, living in Boreham, in her 106th year.' We have some means of testing this report. On 24th December, 1609, Sarah, daughter of Richard Adams, was baptised in Great Leighs. On 26th July 1632, she married Peter Wingfield, and the Peter Wingfield, who died 1731, might be her son. By 1731, however, she would have been 122 years of age. The reputed centenarian appears thus to be a step-mother, and her great age questionable.

Daniel Harvey, of Wivenhoe.—Daniel Harvey, Commander of the Wivenhoe Custom House cutter, was at Wivenhoe in 1768, and was buried there in 1793. His wife's name was Elizabeth. Who were her parents, and where was she married? He was not born there, nor were his two children born there. His descendants are known, but it is desired to find his parents. His arms were a chevron between three leopards' heads cabossed, which are the same as those of the Dagenham Harveys, but I have not yet been able to trace a connection. Any assistance towards that end, I should be grateful for.—G. S. Parry (Lieut.-Colonel), 18, Hyde Gardens, Eastbourne.

George Harvey, of Maldon.—I am endeavouring to trace a certain George Harvey, of Maldon, and at present have only the following data upon which to work. In my possession is a copy of a Confirmation of Arms granted in 1603 to this George Harvey, from which an extract is below appended. I should be very glad to receive any information about either of the two Harveys mentioned therein or their forefathers.

To all and singular Noble and Gentilmenne . . . Wm. Derricke, Garter, principalle King of Arms of England, and William Camden, alias Clarencieux, King of Arms. . . . The Grante of, or testimonies whereof, appertaineth unto us in vi tue of our offices from the Kings most excellent Majesty and His Highnesse's most noble and victorious Progenitors, whereof being solicited and by certaine reports informed *that George Harvey, now of the Towne of Maldon in the County of Essex, youngest of four sonnes of Roger Harvey, whose father for approved services to her late most excellent Princess Elizabeth, Queene of England, of famous memorie, was advanced and rewarded with Landes and Tenementes in those parts of Essex, where they have continued by many descentes and been Magistraie* in good regimission and Credit, and for that the said George Harvey, having been, by the King's Highnesse, made a Captain in the troopes now raising for the good service of his Highnesse in the Kingdom of Ireland and having produced to us his anciente Coate of Armmes heretofore assigned unto him. . . . We, the said Garter and Clarencieux, have assigned, granted and confirmed . . . unto the said George Harvey and his posterity: that shield and Coat of Arms namely:—On a shield of Gules, a bend dexter argent charged with three Trefoiles vert, and, for his crest or cognisance, a Lion proper holding in his dexter paw a Trefoil vert, fixed on a Helmet with Mantelloes and Tassels. . . . In witness whereof . . . Wee have subscribed and fastened the Seals of our offices. Given at the Office of Armmes at London, the third day of December, in the first year of the reign of our most Gracious Sovereigne Lord James Kinge of England . . . and so forth, 1603.

Captain G. H. HARVEY, A.S.C., Woolwich.

MALDON CHURCH GOODS.

Omnium Sanctorum [All Saints] Malden } JOHN COLE gard. } JOHN BURTON [Churchwardens]

They want a Commn. Cupp & a Clothe.

Compt. [appeared] Burton gard. [churchwarden] et juratus est, & saith that Thos. Webb, late churchwdn, is gone owte of the parishe, & carried awaye the cuppe & clothe, & (it is thereupon ordered) that because they haue not used that direct means wch lawe requireth, to recover the same cupp & clothe, the churchwdns shall call a vestry & shall make a rate & provide a cupp & cloth . . . —*Liber Actorum.* vol. 37. fol. 103, A.D. 1598.

R. H. BROWNE.

MET. BOROUGH OF POPLAR PUBLIC LIBRARIES

REVIEWS OF BOOKS, &c.

Stephen Marshall, a Forgotten Essex Puritan, by E. Vaughan. London: Arnold Fairbairns and Company, Limited. MCMVII. Pp. 135, crown 8vo. Illustrated from photographs. Price 2s. 6d.

THIS is an account of the famous divine who was humorously called by Dean Stanley 'the Primate of the Presbyterian Church.' His position as chaplain to the Long Parliament, and as one of the most prominent members of the Westminster Assembly, brought him into the first rank of those churchmen who dissented from Laud and his innovations.

An East Anglian, born at Godmanchester, Marshall was a typical example of the poor scholar of humble birth (his father was a glover) who passed from gleaning in the fields with his sister, to Cambridge, and thence to the service of the Church. Marshall entered Emanuel College, that nursery of Puritanism; he was presented to the lectureship at Wethersfield on the death of Richard Rogers, married, while there, Susanna Castell, of Woodham Walter, and had three daughters. In 1625 he was promoted to be vicar of the adjoining parish of Finchingfield, where he remained in charge for five and twenty years. For ten of them, however, while events were stirring in London, Marshall left the large country parish chiefly in the hands of Hugh Glover (who after his death succeeded as vicar) and betook himself to the capital, where his thundering oratory was much in demand. Dorothy Osborne comments on his preaching at Westminster Abbey, and in his 'bull-like' voice, he delivered one favourite sermon, 'Curse ye Meroz' (on p. 30 'Merox') as many as fifty times. In the Abbey he was buried with great honour, at his death in 1655, only to be cast out in 'the violent extirpation' that succeeded the Restoration.

Miss Vaughan dedicates her book to the memory of her father, the Rev. Matthew Vaughan, vicar of Finchingfield for many years. It has been a labour of love to her to describe the quaint village, its handsome church, and the many manor houses and small country seats that abound in the district, and to enter into the associations of each. She has devoted herself to the study of Marshall's history in the most untiring manner, and has produced a capital little volume

of strong local interest, written with ease and in a scholarly manner, brightened here and there with a racy line or a touch of lively humour. The chief authorities for Marshall's life are an anonymous and highly vituperative pamphlet, called in high derision *The Godly Man's Legacy to the Saints on Earth*, and an answer to it, written by Marshall's friend and sometime neighbour, Giles Firmin, vicar of Shalford. One of these is to be received with much caution and with due allowance for the fierce party and polemical feeling of the times, the other, with its professed object of being a *Brief Vindication*, errs, perhaps, on the other side. Miss Vaughan has laboured among many other authorities of the period, all of whom profess stout adhesion to one side, with scant understanding the other. The committee appointed by the Parliament for inquiring into scandalous ministers was by no means inclined to underrate such enormities as bagging hops on Sundays or pitching corn on Saturday, 'at night, when it were better the minister were in his study'; but on the other hand Walker is also prone in his pro-Royalist *Sufferings of the Clergy* to attribute laxity and cruelty to his enemies, the independent and presbyterian ministers whom he never counted within the pale of the church at all. Perhaps it was hardly worth while to revive the old stories (printed once for all in the well worn pages of David's *Evangelical Nonconformity in Essex*) of drunken ministers and poaching priests; and the history of forgotten disputes and brawls in Thaxted about Parson Hall, from one of the innumerable tracts of the times, which occupies some ten pages, might have given place to some more spicy details of the adventures of Marshall's daughters, Beck and Anne, who as Pepys tells us, went on the stage and were noted for their 'mighty fine acting.' Miss Vaughan misses the point of the curious anagram adopted by the writers of that quaint pamphlet issued in 1640-1, under the name of Smectymnuus, when she prints in every case 'Smectymnus'. Marshall's were the first initials, and the last were those of William Spurstow '*double u*, s,' as an old writer tells us. The 'a' in Wethersfield is archaic. The eighteen small illustrations are excellent, and the quotations and reproduced page from the town book of Finchingfield about the repair of Petches Bridge, are among the most valuable things in the volume. It is a pity there is no Index.

The Houblon Family: Its Story and Times. By Lady Alice Archer Houblon. Two vols., London. Archibald Constable and Company, Ltd., 1907, pp. xi., 382; ix., 332. Price 31s. 6d.

These two handsome volumes, which Lady Alice Archer Houblon has filled with the history of her family, make the most delightful and interesting reading, and are packed with the stuff of history—of England at large, and of Essex in particular. At the end of the fifteenth century, one of the De Houbelons migrated from Picardy to the busy town of Lille in Flanders. The family here founded by him soon became rich and prosperous, but with thunder clouds of religious persecutions looming in the air, the grandsons of this De Houbelon were wise in crossing over to England, to found there an important and leading firm of 'Merchant Strangers,' trading with Flanders and backed by substantial funds. Other refugees joined them, became naturalised subjects, supported their own Walloon Church in Threadneedle Street, married among their own community, and strengthened the growth of puritanism in the country of their adoption. Some additional facts of residence, possessions, etc., of these brothers, Pierre and Nicholas, will, we fancy, be found in the Huguenot Society's *Index to Aliens*, shortly to appear.

During the civil wars, the representative of the family, James Houblon, was a man of great importance, closely connected with the Royal Exchange, and the negotiator of loans to the Parliament, which were acknowledged by a grant of 2,000 acres of land in Ireland. James and his five sons were all merchants, mentioned often by the convivial Pepys. When he died in 1682, nearly ninety years of age, James Houblon bore the proud title of '*Pater Bursae Londinensis*.' In his old age, he retired from city life to a country home near Wanstead, thus beginning the connection with Essex which has lasted ever since. His son Jacob, born in 1634, was the sole exception in a race of men exclusively absorbed in business, and even he was partly so engaged. He turned to the English church, became a fellow of Peterhouse, Cambridge, took orders at the Restoration, married, and became rector of Moreton, in Essex. His grandmother had been a La Motte, and one of Jacob's own sponsors was his relative

Esther, Lady Honeywood, wife of Sir Thomas. From this Essex son, Jacob, the present representatives of the Houblon Family are descended. A beautiful miniature of him as a young man, painted by Samuel Cooper in his most highly finished style, is preserved at Hallingbury Place, and forms the frontispiece to the first volume.

Jacob ministered to his flock at Moreton for thirty-six years, died there in December 1698, aged 64, and lies buried in the chancel of the church. Another of the brothers, Sir James, built himself a house near Wanstead, called Forest House, which Lady Alice says is now an adjunct to West Ham Workhouse, used for the accommodation of old and respectable paupers. Sir John, the third brother, was Lord Mayor of London 1695; he was also a Lord of the Admiralty, and the first Governor of the newly-established Bank of England, having, as colleagues on the board, three other Houblons. These commercial princes came forward to face the financial crisis of the time, and by their energy, prudence and foresight were able to avert the imminent ruin of 1696 and 1697, and this notwithstanding the very heavy loss of property which the great fire of London had entailed on them in 1666.

Sir John had two children: Anne, who married Sir Henry Temple, created first Viscount Palmerston, and became the great grandmother of the famous statesman; and Richard, knighted by George I. in 1715. Sir Richard never married. He was the last of the merchant princes of his name. He saw approaching an industrial problem, and determined 'to carve out new duties and surroundings for those who were to follow him.' Agriculture had revived under the corn bounties, and a new race of landowners began to invade the counties. Sir Richard set his heart upon founding a race of country squires, and left his large fortune in trust for the purchase of estates to be added to land he already owned in Essex and Hertfordshire and entailed upon his first cousin's child, Jacob Houblon, who at the time of his death (1724) was aged six years.

The rector of Moreton, above mentioned, had two sons, (1) Charles, a merchant in London, who purchased Bobbingworth Hall and died young in 1711, leaving this infant son; and (2) Jacob, a parson like his father, and rector of Bobbingworth. On him devolved the guardianship of the

young Jacob (he had no child of his own) and the carrying out of the family trust. Very faithfully did he fulfil both. In 1729, Hallingbury Place was purchased; in 1735 he saw his nephew elected M.P. for Colchester, and married to the only daughter of Sir John Hynde Cotton, of Madingley, Cambs.; a year later he stood godfather by proxy to an heir—the fourth Jacob—and then he was gathered to his fathers and buried at Bobbingworth, leaving this simple will 'I leave you my nephew J. Houblon, my sole executor.'

We cannot follow in detail the story of this family much farther, but can strongly recommend lovers of biography and history to follow it themselves in the author's most vivid narrative. She has succeeded in completing a work of the utmost importance, in which there is never a dull page, whether in the first volume, occupied as it largely is with the history of the flight from persecution abroad, and the founding of the commercial houses in a new soil; or in the second volume, where the Essex life of the Houblons is more particularly described. The chapter entitled 'Home' is a perfect picture of English country life in the eighteenth century; Hallingbury and its library, the surrounding forest of Hatfield Broad Oak, with its famous Doodle Oak and its rights and keepers; the estate, its farms and neighbours are each dwelt upon in turn. Of Down Hall and Matthew Prior, Lady Alice writes: 'Tradition says that its cut alleys of hornbeam have the ancient Doodle Oak of Hatfield Forest in their line of sight; but as they are many miles apart, and Essex is *not flat* thereabouts, we will not vouch for that tale.'

Hallingbury was rebuilt after the old squire's death in 1770. It, of course, contains a store of portraits, miniatures, manuscripts, and family records upon which to draw, and the pages of these two well illustrated volumes are enlivened by many racy letters and beautiful faces. Perhaps none is more captivating than that of Mary Anne Bramston, of Skreens, who married John Archer Houblon, only son of the fourth Jacob. The story ends with the death in 1891 of their son, the Squire of the same name, so well remembered by many now living. The book is an Essex classic, worthy to rank beside Lady Verney's well-known histories of her house of Claydon, Buckinghamshire. Nowhere can we recall a volume relating

to our county so packed with the doings of an Essex family, or showing so remarkable an insight into the economic and industrial and agricultural history of the past three centuries.

The Memoirs of Ann Lady Fanshawe, wife of the Right Hon. Sir Richard Fanshawe, Bart., 1600-72 reprinted from the original manuscript in the possession of Mr. Evelyn John Fanshawe, of Parsloes, with four photogravure portraits and twenty-nine other reproductions. Pp. xlii., 617, 6 sheets of pedigree, demy 8vo., London and New York (John Lane), MCMVII. Price 16s. net.

Most of our readers are doubtless well acquainted with the interesting *Memoirs* of Ann Lady Fanshawe, written by the wife of the Right Hon. Sir Richard Fanshawe, Bart., as long ago as 1676 (the latter pages have been removed and probably destroyed, so we now have only the record from 1600 to 1672), edited by Sir Harris Nicolas, and published in 1829 and 1830. This edition was printed from a copy of the original, and was known to abound with errors.

We now have quite an *edition de luxe*, fully illustrated and amply annotated, with elaborate pedigrees of the family; in fact, in the Introductory Note, the editor, Mr. H. C. Fanshawe, apologises for the undue length of the notes. These extend to no less than 336 pages of too small type, apart from the five appendices and an addenda. The great interest of this fine volume is that it relates to a prolific Derbyshire family, who have been owners of Parsloes in Dagenham, now unfortunately desolate and neglected, for nearly 300 years. The elder branch was settled at Jenkins, Barking, which Henry Fanshawe purchased in 1567, but that fine old manor house has long since disappeared, the modern house of the Manor farm occupying its site. There is not a great deal of Essex interest in the *Memoirs* themselves, although Sir Richard and Lady Fanshawe were Essex landowners, and frequently visited their cousins at Jenkins and Parsloes in this county. Sir Richard Fanshawe was the tenth child and fifth and youngest son of Sir Henry Fanshawe, whose father bought Jenkins in Essex, and Ware Park in Herts, where Sir Richard was born in June 1608. Sir Thomas Fanshawe, who lived at Jenkins, was Clerk of the Crown and Surveyor General to James I. His brother William, of Parsloes, was

Auditor of the Duchy of Lancaster. His eldest daughter married Sir Christopher Hatton, and his second, Sir Benjamin Ayloffe, of Braxted. Ann Lady Fanshawe was the eldest daughter of Sir John Harrison, of Balls, Herts.

Sir Richard Fanshawe had many preferments; the authoress of the *Memoirs* tells us she lived in seven courts (p. 116), but the greater part of the memoirs relate to the years while he was ambassador to the courts of Portugal and Spain; he died at Madrid, 26th June 1666. Lady Fanshawe, who survived her husband nearly sixteen years, records the birth of six living sons and eight daughters, seventeen children are given in the pedigree; yet the memoirs were written for the edification of 'my most dear and only son.' Many journeys, with several exciting adventures, are minutely described, as are the later ceremonials while her husband was ambassador at Madrid, often the minutest details of dress are recorded.

The volume contains much varied information, personal and genealogical, of one of our oldest Essex families, and is thus of exceptional interest to Essex readers, and to all students of history. It is well got up, with thirty-nine illustrations, not of equal merit; there is an excellent Index, in which it may be observed the word 'Essex' does not occur.

A History of Dedham. Reprinted from *The Parish Magazine*, with appendices and a few additional chapters and paragraphs, by the Rev. Charles Alfred Jones, formerly chaplain of St. John's College, Cambridge, Vicar of Dedham and Rural Dean. Colchester: Wiles and Son, 1907. Pp. 5, 188. Crown 8vo.

The parish magazine is often a mine of valuable local information, when it is carried on, as the Vicar of Dedham has carried on his, with contributions and aid from all sources and many hands. To reprint from past numbers in one volume all matters relating to the actual history of Dedham is an excellent thing. Mr. Jones has written many things in it himself, but the main history is from the pen of Mr. Francis M. Nichols, of Lawford Hall. Other portions, as the appendices on Matthew Newcomen and William Burkitt, who endowed the Dedham Lectureship, are by Miss C. Fell Smith. Appendix I., on the Parish Register Book of Dedham, by the Rev. Canon Tancock,

of Little Waltham, is, we think, reprinted from *The Essex Review*, but there appears no acknowledgment of this source. The account of the Grammar School, now unfortunately closed, is full, and the interesting fact is brought out that Dame Joan Clarke, who built a schoolhouse shortly before 1571, was a daughter of Stephen Dunton, clothmaker, by whose will, dated 1518, the almshouses were founded. The closing chapter on New Dedham, Massachusetts, by Rev. W. F. Cheney, Rector of a church there, is interesting.

All these valuable contributions are worth preserving in available form for reference and permanence. We cannot too highly recommend the compilation of parish histories, in however tentative and elementary a way, whether in the pages of Parish Magazines, or in more durable character, as small pamphlets or books. We, ourselves, shall be always glad to welcome to the *Essex Review*, and reprint, any such articles, or portions of books, and we shall begin in our next number with a short note on High Easter Parish in Domesday Book, from the pen of the Vicar, the Rev. Edward Gepp.

Appendix ix. of the *History of Dedham* consists of the following note on a curious inscription.

THE DUMB ANIMALS' PETITION.

The following is a copy of a cast-iron inscription above the door of the old Toll-gate Cottage at the foot of Gun Hill. It was written and placed there by the Rev. J. T. Hurlock, rector of Langham, who died in the year 1847:—

The Dumb Animals' Humble Petition.
Rest, driver, rest, on this steep hill,
Dumb beasts pray use with all good-will;
Goad not, scourge not with thonged whips,
Let not one curse escape your lips.
"God sees and hears."

J. T. H. *posuit.*

The foot of this hill is a very dangerous spot for cyclists, and has of recent years been the scene of several serious accidents.

From an] THE FRONT OF THE PALACE OF BEAULIEU, COMMONLY CALLED NEW HALL. *[Old Print.*

THE

ESSEX REVIEW:

A Quarterly Journal for the County.

MET. BOROUGH OF POPLAR PUBLIC LIBRARIES

No. 66.] APRIL, 1908. VOL. XVII.

NEW HALL, BOREHAM.

1062—1553.

BY M. P.

FEW houses own a more varied record than the old Tudor mansion of New Hall, in the parish of Boreham. Such, indeed, is the historic interest associated with the place that it has been aptly called 'an epitome of English history.'

New Hall was one of the six manors into which the parish of Boreham was formerly divided (Old Hall, New Hall, Brent Hall, Porters, Culverts, and Walkfares), and its singularly inappropriate name was given to distinguish it from Old Hall, which lay nearer the church.

The manor of New Hall was given with other lands by Earl Harold, who afterwards became King, to the college of Secular Canons, which he had founded at Waltham in 1062. On account of its convenient situation almost midway between the port of Harwich and London, New Hall was frequently used as a house of entertainment for royal and distinguished persons on their way to or from the Continent. Adelais, daughter of Geoffrey, Duke of Louvain, stayed here on her way to London for her marriage to Henry I., in 1121. She is said to have written to her father that the Abbot's court at New Hall was more splendid than that of the Duke. There is a slight mistake here, either on the part of the lady, or her historian, for the Secular Canons of Waltham were governed by a Dean. His court, however, may well have been magnificent, for six manors were assigned for his support.

In 1177, Henry II. replaced the old foundation of Seculars by an Abbey of Regular Canons of St. Augustine, and New Hall, for its attractions of climate and scene, was chosen as the summer residence of 'my Lorde Abbat.'

Princess Maud, daughter of Henry II., affianced to Henry, Duke of Saxony and Bavaria, was entertained here on her way to Holland.

King John came here on his way from Dunmow, to divert his mind from an overpowering remorse. In the parish church at Little Dunmow, an alabaster memorial is still to be seen of the good and beautiful Matilda, daughter of Lord Robert Fitzwalter, who is said to have been poisoned by command of the royal profligate. Henry, a natural son of King John, obtained a grant of New Hall for a time, and led here a most disreputable life.

In 1347, John de Vere, the Lord Abbot of Waltham, entertained here, with great magnificence, Queen Philippa, wife of Edward III., after her victory over the Scots at Neville's Cross.

So much unmonastic prodigality incurred censure from Rome, and the Canons of Waltham accordingly exchanged New Hall for two manors nearer their Abbey, Copped Hall and Shingled Hall, in Epping. This exchange was effected in 1350 with Sir John de Shardelow, Knight, whose son afterwards again bartered New Hall and its appurtenances in Boreham, Springfield, Little Baddow, Little Waltham, Broomfield, and Hatfield Peverel, with Sir Henry de Coggeshall, Knight, for the manors of Bradeker in Shropham, and Holkham in Norfolk. The Coggeshalls remained in possession until 1423, when New Hall passed by marriage settlement into the hands of John de Boreham. Queen Margaret of Anjou is said to have purchased the manor by the advice of her minister, Suffolk, and to have here planned out many of her campaigns on behalf of her absent husband, Henry VI. She was visited here by her staunch ally, Cardinal Beaufort, Bishop of Winchester. After the death of her favourite minister, the Duke of Suffolk, who was murdered at sea in 1450, Margaret lost all interest in New Hall, and left it in charge of a faithful servant, Richard Alred, who was succeeded here by his son, in 1446. On the accession of Edward IV., the manor was seized as crown property by the royal usurper. At Whitsuntide, 1480, he held his court here, and New Hall became once more, for a time, a scene of disgraceful revelry on the part of the dissolute King and his courtiers.

Thomas Boteler, or Butler, Earl of Ormond, received a

grant of New Hall from Henry VII., in acknowledgment of his fidelity to the cause of Lancaster. In 1491, he was granted a license to fortify his new possession with walls and a tower, and is said to have rebuilt New Hall after the model of an ancient palace of the Kings of Ulster. He left only two daughters, of whom Margaret, the eldest, married Sir William Boleyn, of Blickling, in Norfolk, son of a former Lord Mayor of London. Their son was Sir Thomas Boleyn, who by his marriage with Elizabeth, daughter of Thomas Howard, Duke of Norfolk, became the father of the notorious Anne Boleyn.

Henry VIII. acquired the manor of New Hall in the ninth year of his reign, as Camden has it, by exchange with Sir Thomas Boleyn, who had inherited it from his mother. Henry was so delighted with his new acquisition that he gave it the name of Beaulieu, which, however, it was not destined long to retain. He erected it into an Honour, and lavished on it many tokens of his taste for magnificence. He built a noble gate-house, which with its turrets was so extensive as to form the south side of the great quadrangle, on the west side of which was the chapel, and on the east a building that has a very ecclesiastical appearance, as may be seen in the frontispiece. Over the gate were his arms carved in free-stone, supported by a dragon and a greyhound with this inscription underneath:—

Henricus rex octavus, rex inclitus armis,
Magnanimus struxit hoc opus egregium.

The inscription is supported by a lion and a hawk. The arms and supporters, the foliage which forms the ground-work, the crowned rose, the crowned pomegranate above, and the same uncrowned below, but above all the royal crown itself, form a *chef d'œuvre* of the sculptor's art. The hatchment has been lately regilded and repainted, appropriate colours being chosen by Heralds' College. When the gateway was pulled down, the arms were removed to the interior of the great hall, now the convent chapel. The very inferior framework of arms, helmets, and trophies was added when the arms were placed in their present position. The stone dragon, now in the Park, was probably another ornament of the gate-way. It represents the historic Rouge Dragon of the Princes of Wales, so much affected by the Tudors, as commemorative of their supposed descent from King Arthur. Henry chose Beaulieu for

his summer residence, and entertained here, with one of the extravagant masquerades for which his court was famous, his wife, Katharine of Aragon, and his sister Mary, Queen Dowager

ARMS OF HENRY VIII., NOW IN THE GREAT HALL.

of France. He also kept here the Feast of St. George, 1524, in right royal style. Three years later Anne Boleyn returned to England after a questionable career at the French Court. She joined Queen Katharine's ladies, and spent the summer at

Beaulieu. Soon honours began to shower on Sir Thomas Boleyn. He was made Viscount Rochford on 8th June 1525, and soon after Knight of the Garter. On 24th January 1529, he was made Earl of Wiltshire. Having thus judiciously paved the way, Henry entered into negotiations with Sir Thomas Boleyn, concerning marriage with his daughter Anne. He, proving amenable, was rewarded with the dignity of Lord Privy Seal, 24th January 1530. After her union with the King, Anne frequently visited this palace and gave a magnificent ball here to celebrate the birth of her daughter Elizabeth in 1533.

Princess Mary Tudor, daughter of Henry VIII. by Katharine of Arragon, took up her abode at Beaulieu after separation from her mother in 1532. She lived in complete seclusion from the Court, finding her consolation in the companionship of her mother's friend, Margaret Pole. This admirable woman was the daughter of George, Duke of Clarence, who had been murdered in the Tower by his brother Edward IV. Margaret's only brother, young Edward Plantagenet, was legally murdered on account of his right to the throne by Henry VII. Queen Katharine always attributed this sanguinary deed to the instigation of her father, Ferdinand of Arragon, who had refused to give his daughter in marriage to Prince Arthur, as long as a male heir to the House of York was living. The unhappy Queen attributed her subsequent misfortunes to the fact that her marriage had been 'made in blood.' Meanwhile she strove to make Margaret all reparation by loading her with favours. Henry VII. gave her in marriage to Sir Richard Pole, his Master of Horse, by whom she had five children, the most eminent of whom was Reginald, afterwards Cardinal Pole. Margaret was named god-mother and State Governess to the young Princess Mary, having been given the title of Countess of Salisbury 1513, together with her brother's large estates in Hampshire, Wiltshire, and Essex. She was a widow when she began her sojourn at Beaulieu, a warm friend to Queen Katherine, a loyal upholder of her cause, and faithful guardian of her child. In September 1533, the Privy Council sent orders to Mary that she was to lay aside the title of Princess, and to retire to Hatfield, where the nursery of her infant sister Elizabeth was about to be established. The message was delivered to Mary at Beaulieu by Hussey, her chamberlain.

She replied with much spirit that 'she was not a little marvelled at his undertaking such a matter of high emprise as minishing from her state and dignity, she not doubting that she was the King's true daughter, born in good and lawful matrimony.' She afterwards wrote to the Privy Council to the same effect, and also to the King. This letter is signed: 'From your manor of

STONE DRAGON, NOW IN THE PARK.

Beaulieu. October 2. By your most humble daughter, Mary, Princess.'

In 1534, an Act of Parliament was passed, declaring Henry's marriage with Katherine null and void, that with Anne Boleyn lawful and valid; the King's issue by the first marriage was excluded from succession to the throne, that by the second entitled to inherit. The Royal Commissioners then visited Beaulieu, and dispersed Mary's household, which consisted of 160 persons. She was separated from her faithful Lady Gover-

ness, and sent to Hunsdon, as an attendant to her infant sister. Katherine of Arragon died at Kimbolton on 7th January 1536, and Anne Boleyn was executed four months later. After the King's marriage with Jane Seymour, the Princess was allowed to return to Beaulieu, and in the summer of 1538 she sent presents of 'quails and cucumbs' from her favourite palace to Queen Jane.

In 1540, Anne of Cleves was conducted hither by Thomas Cromwell, Earl of Essex, on her way to London for her marriage with Henry VIII., and in the following year Mary received yet another sorrow in the tidings of the death of her devoted Governess, Margaret Pole, who was inhumanly executed on Tower Hill, by command of Henry VIII., out of his hatred for her son, the Cardinal, Reginald Pole.

In the reign of her brother Edward VI., Mary continued to reside at Beaulieu. During his minority, she was much interfered with by the Privy Council, concerning her religion. The Emperor Charles V., her cousin, threatened to declare war with England if this continued, and in the summer of 1550 he sent ships to hover off the east coast, to be ready, in case his remonstrances were not heeded, to convey Mary to the protection of his sister, the Queen of Hungary. New Hall is only nine miles from Maldon on the Blackwater, and it was feared that Mary would make her escape by this port. The Privy Council then tried to persuade Mary that the air of Essex was not good for her. She replied that all her household were in good health, and though she had been ill herself, this was to be attributed to the fall of the leaf, when she rarely escaped an attack of illness. The complaint urged against Mary at court was that she would not have Mass with closed doors, but allowed the country folk to come to her chapel. By royal invitation Mary rode to London from Wanstead, where she was staying in the spring of 1551, to interview her brother and the Lords of his council in person. Mary there protested that her soul was God's, and she would neither change her faith, nor dissemble her opinion. She was told that the King did not constrain her faith, but insisted that she should obey like a subject and not rule like a sovereign. As Mary remained inflexible, offering to lay her head on the block rather than submit, Cranmer decided that 'Though to give license to sin, was sin, yet to suffer and wink at it for a time

might be borne, so all haste possible were used.' Edward then yielded, but in tears, and the brother and sister parted amicably next day. Mary returned to Beaulieu, where she was allowed to have her Mass, without further molestation.

It is an interesting fact that one of Mary's last guests at Beaulieu, was the celebrated Lady Jane Grey, who was here in the summer of 1552.

On the evening of 6th July, 1553, Edward VI. died at Greenwich. Mary received the news at Hunsdon, where she was then staying, and immediately rode to Kenninghall in Norfolk, and thence to Framlingham, where she was joined by over 30,000 men. On her progress to London, she slept at Beaulieu, as far as we know for the last time, probably on the night of the second of August, 1553.

The only memorials of Mary's residence at New Hall found here by the present owners were some of the old chapel benches, and some pewter tankards marked with a portcullis not crowned. In the Boreham Register an entry of the year 1562 runs thus : ' Betteris Apryes landeres to Queen Mary.' It is thought that some of the beautiful trees in the grounds may have been planted in her time, as she had much taste in that way.

With regard to souvenirs of Anne Boleyn, a drawing and description are given in the *Essex Review* of April, 1901, of a plaster panel fixed in a summer house at Sheepcote Farm, Little Waltham. The armorial bears the badge of Anne Boleyn. ' A stump of a tree couped and eradicated (or), thereon a falcon (arg), crowned with a royal crown and holding a sceptre (ppr), before him, a bunch of flowers with both red and white roses issuing from the stump.' We shall have occasion to allude again to this interesting relic later on. Sheepcote Farm is within two miles of New Hall, and the panel may easily have been removed thither when parts of the old mansion were destroyed. Another farm in the neighbourhood of New Hall, called Bull's Lodge (a corruption of Boleyn's Lodge), was originally part of the Park.

The beautiful painted window, now in St. Margaret's Church, Westminster, was for about two hundred years in the chapel of New Hall. There are many discrepancies in the various accounts of this work of art. The most probable story is that it was intended as a present to Henry VII. for his chapel at Westminster, from the magistrates of Dort in Holland.

Henry VII. died before the completion of the window, and Henry VIII. either gave or sold it to the Canons of Waltham Abbey. At the dissolution of the monasteries it was transferred to Beaulieu, as New Hall was then called, and here it remained until the Civil War. Then, to preserve it from the destructive fanaticism of the Puritans, it was buried underground. At the Restoration, it was replaced in the Chapel by George Monck, Duke of Albemarle, and there it remained until Mr. Olmius, afterwards the first Lord Waltham, sold it to Mr. Conyers, of Copthall, for £50. In 1758, it was purchased from him by the parishioners of St. Margaret's, Westminster, for 400 guineas. The window represents the Crucifixion, with the thieves on either side of Our Saviour, not nailed but tied to their crosses, and, above them, saints and angels holding the instruments of the passion. The side-lights are occupied by portraits of Henry VII. and his Queen, Elizabeth of York, copied from original pictures sent to Dort for the purpose. Over the King is the picture of St. George, and above him a white rose within a red one. Over the Queen stands St. Catherine, and in a panel above her is a pomegranate vert on a field or, the arms of Granada, to denote the descent of York and Lancaster from the royal families of Spain, by the marriages of John of Gaunt, Duke of Lancaster, and his brother Edmond, Duke of York. It has also been said that the window was intended to be commemorative of the marriage of Prince Arthur with Katherine of Arragon.

In Caraccioli's *Anecdotes of New Hall*, a pamphlet published at Chelmsford, probably about the middle of the eighteenth century, from which many of the preceding details have been taken, a list is given of splendid paintings which were formerly at New Hall. Whether the collection was begun by Henry VIII., the Butlers, or the Boleyns, is uncertain. The chief pictures were :—

Apollo as the Sun : in chariot drawn by four horses. The same god in company with Thetis with sundry animals symbolising him.

On the walls of the saloon, painted in fresco, were the nine Muses, supposed to be painted by Holbein.

In a bed-chamber, was a picture of Hymen with chaplet of roses.

In a gallery, the genealogy of heathen deities.

In the Druid's Grove, were six druids, long hair, beards, etc.

In Queen Anne Boleyn's chamber, a picture of Alexander and Apelles.

In dining-room, a large picture of Henry Picard, Lord Mayor of London, complimenting the Prince of Wales, when he brought King John a prisoner to the Tower. This picture was in the collection of Philip Howard, Earl of Arundel. A statue of Caractacus, in the vestibule, also belonged to the same earl.

In the labyrinth was a statue of Minos, Judge of Hell.

In other parts of grounds there were statues of Harpocrates, the Parcae and Nemesis.

This valuable collection of statues and paintings underwent the fate of so many others that were, says the Italian author, 'defaced and mutilated by fanaticism, superstition and savage barbarity.'

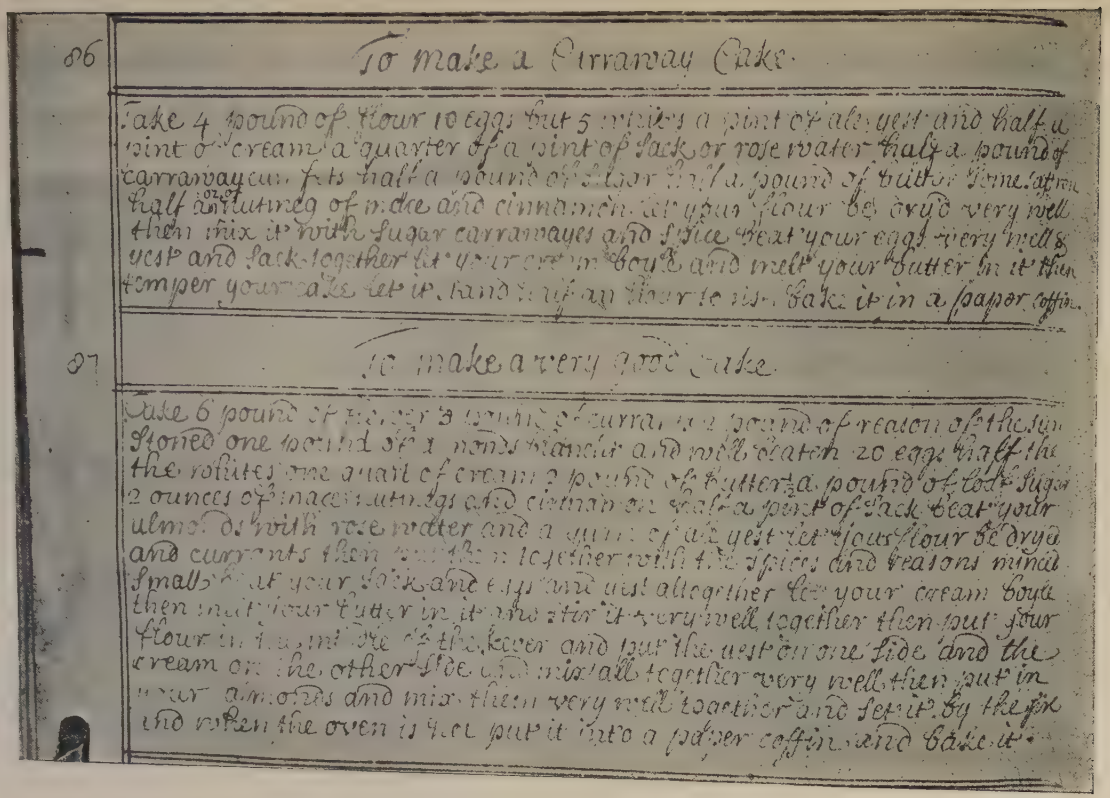
(*To be continued.*)

LEAVES FROM AN ESSEX STILL-ROOM.

BY ISABEL LUCY GOULD AND BEATRICE MARY GOULD.

THERE has lately come into our possession, from our uncle, the late Mr. I. Chalkley Gould, a manuscript which we have every reason to believe is the still-room book of an old Essex home. The writing, which is on vellum, appears to be, with the exception of a page or two, all in one hand, a beautifully neat one, as may be seen in our illustration, which shows it about three-quarters of the original size. The character of the writing and the recipes date it back to the early days of the eighteenth century, and finishing about the close of that century. It is, of course, impossible to fix an arbitrary date as to its commencement, or to the latter portion of it, but roughly speaking, we believe it to embrace the period mentioned.

There are 532 recipes in the volume, neatly indexed; the binding is in green vellum, with slight decoration in gold. The book has evidently been rebound in later days, as the fore edge has been trimmed down to the script, and there are remains of



86 To make a Carraway Cake.

Take 4 pound of flour 10 eggs but 5 whites a pint of ale yest and half a pint of cream a quarter of a pint of sack or rose water half a pound of carraway comfits half a pound of sugar half a pound of butter some saffron half an ounce of mace and cinnamon let your flour be dryd very well then mix it with sugar carraways and spice beat your eggs very well & yest and sack together let your cream boyl & melt your butter in it then temper your cake let it stand half an hour to rise bake it in a paper coffin.

87 To make a very good Cake.

Take 6 pound of flour 3 pounds of currans a pound of reasons of the sun stoned one pound of almonds blanch'd and well beaten 20 eggs half the whites one quart of cream 2 pound of butter a pound of loaf sugar 2 ounces of mace cinnamon & nutmegs a pint of sack beat your almonds with rose water and a quart of ale yest let your flour be dryd and currants then mingle it together with the spices and reasons mingled small & your sack and yest and yest altogether let your cream boyl then melt your butter in it & stir it very well together then put your flour in the middle of the kever and put the yest on one side and the cream on the other side and mix all together very well then put in your almonds and mix them very well together and set it by the fire and when the oven is hot put it into a paper coffin and bake it.

FROM A PAGE IN AN OLD RECIPE BOOK.

earlier silk in the sewing. It deals, like so many of these books of that period, not only with recipes for the preservation of meat and fruit, but with remedies for the many ills that flesh is heir to ; the prevention of disease; the making of perfumes, and the doctoring of animals. The housewife, or the housekeeper, in those days was indeed called to be not only proficient in needlework, but upon her was placed the onerous duty of providing remedies for the ailments of her entire household; for superintending the making of innumerable preserves from the garden ; for confectionery ; for those delicate perfumes, 'the outward expression of the hidden essence,' which since the discovery of coal tar has become almost a lost art. In addition there was the making of cordials and wines, which were not only fine in flavour, but had that piquancy of bouquet which is denied to us in much of the wholesale manufactured wine of to-day.

Every provision was made for what we now designate 'first aid,' and the manuscript has several remedies for wounds, 'deep wounds or wounds through the body, or wounds made with an invenomd weapon or Sinews prickt,' for 'Sinews strain' in man or beast, and others appertaining to their welfare. Even with all this knowledge, the housekeeper's education was not complete. The good lady had to preserve to the best of her ability, or, as it is quaintly termed, to 'refresh,' carpets, pictures, hangings, gold lace, and other 'Lares and Penates' of the house. The knowledge could not have been lightly achieved, and perhaps it was this necessity and these accomplishments which made the wife really the mistress of her household, and indispensable to her husband.

From the well-worn appearance of the vellum binding, this particular 'simpling book' must have been much utilised, and a valued and treasured heirloom. Refreshing, in these days of doubt, are many of the remedies, in their quaintness, directness, and simplicity of expression, some of them leaving nothing to be desired in their unflinching and unhesitating methods of cure.

Are you deaf? You need not consult an aurist, but 'put grounde ivy, one leafe into each ear, rowle it up but not too hard, put it in fresh mornings and evenings.'

Are you nervously inclined? The following remedy for hysterics, entitled 'Hysterick Electuary, The Lady Gerrard's Rec^t,' should have been efficacious :

'Venice treacle, half an ounce; bittony flowers, rosemary flowers, and burrage flowers, of each half an ounce; amber in powder, half an ounce; castor in fine powder, one dram; let these be incorporated in a stone morter wth as much sirrop of pioneys as will make a stiff electuary. Let ye patient at the full and change of the moon, at going to rest, take the quantity of a nutmeg in 3 small pills, and drink after it a Small draught of posset, made with white wine, with a root of single pioney boyled in it; and for 3 mornings after, use no other breakfast but a draught of the Same posset. Hereby are cured both old and young of convulsions, Hystericks, Vapours, fits and falling sickness.'

The nostrum for the prevention and cure of plague shows a catholic taste in the use of herbs, as the following, entitled 'The Plague Water,' depicts:—

'Take Rue, Agrimony, Calandine, Sage, Wormewoode, Balme, Feaver-fur, Mugwort, Tournentil, Marygold flowers, Cowslip flowers, Pansie flower, leaves and all, Cardius, Angelicoe, Dragons, Pimpernel, Rosemary, Scordium, Purplewort, Burnet, Enulcampane roots of each of these half a pound shred small, then take Anniseeds, Carraway, Coriander, Cardaimome, of each these two ounces bruised, bruise alsoe your Enulcampane roots, then steep all these in an earthen pot in two quarts of white wine and a gallon of ye best canary, mixing them well in ye liquor, to let it stand till ye next day, then distill it in an ordinary still close stopd whilst it steeps and whilst you still it, stirring it when you putt it into ye still, for keep it for your use. Ye Lady Downs adds wood sorril a good quantity, roots of Indian sneakeweed, 1 pound, burdock roots 3lb.'

Was my lady in low spirits, or suffering from 'the vapours,' the still-room could be called upon for a restorative entitled 'The Lady Button's Melancholy Water':—

'Take of wall gilly flowers 4 handfulls, of rosemary flowers 3 handfulls, of Damaske Rose leaves and cowslip flowers a like quantity, of burrage and bugglos flowers, of each 2 handfulls, a like quantity of primroses and clove jilly flowers, balme leaves and pinks, of each 6 handfulls; of marygolds 2 handfulls; of cinnamon grossly beaten half an ounce; 2 nutmegs; 3 pennyworth of English saffron; 2 orange peels; 4 ounces of blew figs; steep them in Sack enough to cover them, and as you add flowers, add Sack; when you have gotten them all together, distill them in a cold still, and cover them in the still with sack, and when all is drawn off you must put into your water before you use it, 6 ounces of white Sugar Candie, it must be stilled with a soft fire, or your water will be ye smaller. It is good for any heaviness of spirits.'

It is difficult to realise in these days how absolutely dependent for supplies from its own sources were the manor, the hall, and the cottage. The forest, the field, the garden, and the live stock must have been a source of anxiety as to their yield from season to season. Means of communication with neighbouring towns were poor, the circulation of money was indifferent, so those who lived in rural districts, like beleaguered soldiers, were thrown upon their own resources.

Passing from the pages devoted to the remedies for the various ailments of mankind, we strike a happier vein in those wherein many strange recipes are given for the making of wines and cordials. Those who are readers of the famous diary of Pepys will remember his mention of that 'most brave drink cooled in ice,' Metheglin, of which he partook at 'the Backe-stayres, Whitehall.' We wonder if it was made of the same ingredients as is recorded in these 'Leaves':—

'Take 12 quarts of honey to 12 gallons and a pottle of water, and a fagott of these following herbs: sweet bryer, sweet marjerrom, rosemary and muskecovise, of each a small handfull and boyle them in the water and honey all the time it boyles, and that must be a full hour, keep scumming it clean, then take a bag of these following spices, nutmegs, cloves, mace, and cinament, a quarter of an ounce of each, but most of nutmegs, tie them up in a bag with a bullet in it that may cause it to sink into the middle of your liquor as it boyles, and let it boyle above a quarter of an hour, then take it out and take out the herbs and spices and set some a cooling, and when as cool as wort, put in about half a pint of ale barm, and when cool enough and that it hath gott a good head, turn it up as you do ale, or other liquors, and when it hath done working, hang in again the same bag of spices as you took out into your barrell. Stope it up, till it be clear and then bottle it up.'

Another favourite beverage which, we believe, did not go out of favour till almost modern times, was Syllabub. This drink was evidently partaken of during the early years of the seventeenth century, as James Howell, in his *Familiar Letters* (1625), mentions it in writing to a friend, 'I pray leave the smutty Ayr of London and come hitherto breath sweter, wher you may pluck a Rose, and drink a Cilibub.'

The following was the composition of an Essex 'silliebube':—

'Take a pint of white wine, a pint of morning's cream, and a quarter of a pound of sugar, and put them in a bason and beat them well together, till it come to a froth, then pour it into a Syllabub pot, and milk a sufficient quantity of milk upon it, and Let it stand in a cole place till night, for the longer it stands, so it grows not sour, the clearer the drink will be, and the fimer ye curd.'

We presume that French brandy must have been expensive in England during the early part of the eighteenth century, as among the recipes we notice there is one 'To make Counterfeit Nants Wine':—

'Take 12 pounds of Mailiga raizons, and steep them in 8 gallons of water about 10 days, then barrell up the liquor, and put to it the juice of elder berrys. Set it in some warm place that it may work, and when tis fine, bottle it up and drink it half a year old; half the quantity of fresh raisons put to the first, and half the quantity of juice, will make a smaller sort of wine, and may be drank in a little time.'

Punch came into fashion late in the seventeenth century, and was a favourite drink down to the close of the eighteenth and early nineteenth century. If the details of the following was the usual beverage, it must have indeed been potent :—

'To make Milke Punch' :—

'Take five quarts of brandy, eight quarts of water, and two of new milke; four dozens of lemons, three nutmegs, a pound and a halfe of double refined sugar; pare one dozen of the lemons very thin, leaving none of the white, infuse the parings in some of the brandy about three hours with the nutmegs grated, dissolve the sugar in water before you putt it into the brandy, squeeze in the lemons and let all the ingredients be mixed together, then put them all into a bag of thick flannel and let it run without stirring, let about a quart run out, then put it into the bag againe, and so repeat it till it is fine.'

Some of the specifics to improve the personal appearance were doubtless as efficacious in their application as many of the vaunted remedies that are so much in vogue to-day. The following is entitled 'An Excellent Water to clear the Hands and Face' :—

'Take a quart of fair water, a pint of white wine, the juice of 4 lemons, put into these bean blossoms, white lilly blossoms, a handfull of them all, put them amongst the wine and water and put into four wild daisie roots, 4 marsh mallow roots, and 2 or 3 bunches of wild tansie, as much of femitary, the weight of 2 pence in camphor, put all these together in an earthen pot. Set the pot in warm aishes all night, then in the morning strain it through a piece of white cotten clean washt, and put it into a narrow mouth'd glass. Set the glass in the sun 3 or 4 days in the heat of the Sun if there be any redness or pimples in the face, take the white dung of a hen and so steep in that water all one night, then strain it again through the cloth, wash your face with this water evening and morning. if you wash your hands with any of this water put thereto 3 or 4 bruised almonds, this is ye most excellent water that was ever made to clear hands and face withall. Probatum est.'

Sage was largely utilised in our forefathers' times, and its medicinal and remedial qualities were well known. Spenser speaks of 'the wholesome saulge,' and we all remember the old couplet

'He that would live for aye
Must eat sage in May.'

So we notice its presence even in a salutory, 'water to make the breath swet.'

'Take the powder of Sage, the powder of winter Savery, and the powder of sweet marjerom, the powder of cloves and mace, a little nutmeg, a little musk steeped in the juice of lemons, and white wine, drink all these together, a spoonfull at a time, evening and morning, with the juice of lemons amongst it.'

The making of perfumes was one of those old world delights which more than anything bring before us the days of powdered

wigs and hooped petticoats. Surely the scent of the rose still remains when we read how to make 'A excellent Pommander,' 'A perfume to burne,' 'To Perfume Gloves,' 'Perfume for Linnen,' 'To Perfume bedding,' and many others. One example will suffice : 'A excellent Pommander ' :—

'Take half an ounce of benjamin, half an ounce of damasse rose leaves, a quarter of an ounce of storax, beat these very small Severally, then sift them, and mingle the powder, then take Some gumdragon steep'd in rose water 24 hours, and make it into a stiff past, then take 4 grains of ambergreese, 4 grains of musk, and 2 of civet, grind these together wth a little juice of lemon till they are dissolved, then anoint the hand with essence of jessamie or roses, and work the past well with the musk and amber, if it be too limber, put in powder of roses, if too stiff a little rose water, then weigh them of an equal weight, and rowle them up in your hand, but while they are wet, make holes through them with a bodkin, dry them betwixt 2 papers.'

Does not Shakespeare speak of—

'A liquid prisoner, pent in walls of glass,
Beauty's effect with beauty were bereft.
Nor it, nor no remembrance what it was.
But flowers distilled though they with winter meet
Lose but their show, their substance still lies sweet.'

From the garden were culled sweet-scented plants which were utilized for making 'sweete waters,' perfumed powders, and perfumed waters. The following is a distillation of the last mentioned :—

'Take a gallon of spring water, a handfull of lavender flowers, and as many pinks, 3 handfull of damaske roses, as much sweet marjerum, the peels of 6 oranges, 12 cloves, bruise all these and put to them an ounce of orriss powder, 4 ounces of benjamin powdered ; put all in a rose stille, and draw off the first quart by itself, and then a pint, you may draw after another water from the lees which will serve for present use, but not keep, put into your quart bottle 12 pennyworth of muske, and into your pint bottle 6 pennyworth tyed up in a piece of sersnet, and a little ginger sliced very fair, about as much as will lay on a half-crown, 2 or 3 spoonfulls will sweeten a bason of water. Stop it close.'

A large number of recipes are given for the making and preserving of comestibles, but space forbids us giving more than two extracts. The following titles, however, will indicate the variety contained in this book :—

'To make Fruit Biskit,' 'To pot venison to keep all the year,' 'To make clear cakes of Quinces,' 'To make Paste of Peaches,' 'To make a Quakeing Pudding,' 'To make little cakes,' 'To make Bean Cakes,' 'Angelicoe Cakes,' 'To Souce Pigg,' 'To make a Flesh Cheese,' 'The Lady Seymour's way to coller Beef,' 'To make Muskedyne Cumfits,' 'To preserve

Grapes, Barberryes, or Goosberrys,' 'To Dry Apricocks,' 'Angellot Cheese,' 'To Dress Soales a fine Way,' 'Pickle for Brawn to last a quarter of a Year,' 'To pickle Brown Buds,' 'To make Gimboles.'

A quaint method of pickling, called 'To Souce Pigg,' reads strange in these days :—

'Cutt your pigg into 4 collers of a side, take 12 cloves, 4 leaves of large mace, 2 nuttmegs ; shred, then strew all these on the collers ; with a little salt, rowle them up hard and bind them close, and boyle them 4 hours, and when tis almost boyled, put in a faggot of sweet herbs, and half a pint of vinegar.'

'To make a Carrot pudding' :—

'To the crum of 2 penny loaf and grate it, and half as much grated carrot, and 6 eggs, put four whites, and some sugar, and half a nutmeg, a little salt ; mix it with a pint and a half of cream and you must put into the oven ; melt a quarter of a pound or better of fresh butter, put a little rose water, 2 or 3 spoonfulls of sack, then put it into the oven in a dish, and let it stand half an hour ; the oven must not be to hot. Stop it a little.'

A large number of recipes are given for preserving fruit, but those that read most strangely to us in these days are devoted to human ills. In addition to those already mentioned, there are remedies 'For the Palsie' ; 'To keep the Skin from breaking where ye Dead Palsie is' ; 'For the Biteing of a Madd Dog' ; 'For a Poisoned Dog' ; 'An Electuary for the Green Sickness, or pain in ye stomach' ; 'An Excellent Powder to cure defective memorie, Giddiness in ye Head, or any other Distemper in ye Brain' ; 'For a Sinew strain in man or beast' ; 'For Flegme when it sticks that it cannot come up' ; 'For the Scurvy.'

There are also preparations 'To Destroy Moths in Chairs and Stools, and to refresh ye colour' ; 'To Scoure and refresh the colour of cloth carpets, silk curtains, or any stuff that is stain'd or soil'd' ; 'To Scour and refresh ye colour of Gold and Silver Lace or Fringe' ; 'To dress and Order thin and old Bed-tikes, to make ym keep in their Feathers.'

Even the art of treating the diseases of domestic animals is not overlooked, and we have recipes 'For the Farcy in a Horse,' 'To Cure the Grease in a Horse,' and others.

History has given us few records of the home life that obtained in England during the period of this volume, beyond a few memoirs, books of recipes, occasional notes, needlework, or a diary, that have been handed down to us. Yet how much of the life of a woman must have been devoted to the varied

interests and incidents attaching to the all-absorbing duties which from day to day bound her to the home. To us in these days, when quick transit places in our hands all that we require within a few hours, it is almost impossible to realise the difficulties that must have arisen in the domestic portion of the household even less than a century ago; the failure of this or that crop of fruit, vegetables, corn, or other causes, which prevented the storing up of a plentiful supply of provisions against 'the rainy day.' If only the walls of some old still-rooms could speak, what strange stories they would reveal! As we linger over the well-worn vellum pages of this book, the atmosphere, the environment, of these homes come back to us, like the fragrant scent from some old pot-pourri jar. Memories beget memories, and we live once more in those days, when life was not so strenuous, and when the real charm of home was more deeply appreciated.

MET. BOROUGH OF POPLAR PUBLIC LIBRARIES

SOME ALTHAMS OF MARK HALL IN THE SEVENTEENTH CENTURY.

CONTRIBUTED BY A DESCENDANT.

ON the wall of Latton Church, near Harlow, in Essex, is a monument with this inscription :—

'1640. To the sacred memory of Edward Altham, Esq., who married Elizabeth, the youngest daughter and co-heir of John Barne, of Willsdon, in ye county of Middlesex, Esq. The said Edward deceased ye 8th day of April 1605. The said Elizabeth deceased ye 7th of Jan. 1621; they had issue, Sir James Altham,* who married Elizabeth, the daughter of Sir Francis Barrington, knt. and bart.,† by whom he had issue Joan, since married to Oliver St. John, Esq.—Sir James died the 15th day of July 1610; Sir Edward Altham,‡ who married Joan, daughter of Sir John Leventhorp, knt. and bart.; Captain Emanuel Altham, who died at East India, An. Dom. 1635; Mary Altham, married to Ralph Hawtrey, late of Riselip, in the county of Middlesex, esq. The said Sir Edward Altham and Joan, his wife, lived happily together twenty-two years, and had issue James, married to Alice, daughter and heir of Sir John Spencer, bart.; Edward, John, Leventhorp, Edward, Emanuel;

* Knighted at Whitehall, Jan. 9, 1609-10.
† Cr. 29 June 1611.
‡ Knighted at Royston, March 27, 1612-13.

Joan, married to Thomas Smith, Esq.; Elizabeth; Mary, married to William Halton, Esq.; Bridgett; the said Sir Edward Altham died May 28, 1632. The said Joan'

Here the inscription ends, the date of Lady Altham's death never having been added.

The Altham family had been at Mark Hall, in the parish of Latton, since the year 1562.

'Elizabeth, the daughter of Sir Francis Barrington,' by his wife Joan, daughter of Sir Henry Cromwell, of Hinchinbrook, came from Barrington Hall, Hatfield Broad Oak, Essex.

'Joan, the daughter of Sir John Leventhorp, knt. and bart.,' was from Shingey, *i.e.*, Shingle Hall, Sawbridgeworth, Herts.

Alice, daughter of Sir John Spencer, formerly had her home at Offley Place, Herts.

Joan, married to Sir Thomas Smith, Esq. (created a baronet Nov. 28, 1661), went to Horham Hall, Thaxted, Essex; thence the family removed to Hill Hall, near Epping.

Mary, married to William Halton, Esq., lived with her husband, who was made a baronet 10th Sept. 1642, at Little Sampford, Essex, on the estate he had purchased from Sir Edward Green, paying his fine for ingress, in 1640.

Bridgett, unmarried when the above inscription was written, afterwards married Sir Peter Tyrrill, bart., of Hanslape, Bucks.

The first person on the above monument of whom I am able to write is Joan, Lady Altham, wife of Sir Edward Altham, knight, and daughter of Sir John Leventhorpe, first baronet, by his wife Joan, daughter of Sir John Brograve, knight of Hemells, Attorney General of Lancaster. She was a lady with royal blood in her veins, flowing to her in three lines, in which she was 12th, 13th, and 16th in descent from Edward I. Left a widow in the year 1632, she devoted herself entirely to her large family of children, saw them pass out into the world, and watched their fortunes all through the Civil War. From the many letters I possess, she appears to have lived at Mark Hall, not only during the twenty-two happy years of her married life, but also during the early part of her widowhood, up to the year 1638, when, after her eldest son's marriage, she left for Feltwell in Norfolk. And even then she was constantly staying with one or other of her married children. Her letters are generally

dated either from Feltwell, Horham Hall, Little Sampford or Mark Hall. She writes that she loves Mark Hall more than any other place. She was a woman of keen business habits, a

MARK HALL IN THE SEVENTEENTH CENTURY.
(*From a Water Colour Sketch.*)

devout Christian, and a most loving mother. 'Her ladyship,' as they called her, was indeed the centre and bond of union to the family. Leventhorp, for instance, when 17 years of age, writing to her from abroad, says, 'Though I am afar off, yet shall I not forget your many motherly cares of me.' John, from

Sidney College, Cambridge, anxious himself to change his College, and think of another profession than the one he had proposed for himself, having sounded his mother and found she disapproved, at once writes that the subject shall never be mentioned again. The two younger sons are at Mark Hall with her, and she writes to John at Cambridge, 'Could you bring some pretty civil young scollar downe with you that would be willing, for his diet this summer time, to teach your two brothers, who else I am afrayd will much loose there time, by reason Mr. Denn* hath given over scole, finding himself not fitt to discharge that and his other business.' Edward, troubled with all the new opinions in religion, is bent on becoming a Roman Catholic, and his devoted mother requests the Bishop of Exeter (Ralph Brownrigg) who had been over him as Master at St. Catherine College, Cambridge, to write and try to keep him back. Emanuel is dreadfully extravagant, and she is much distressed, taking counsel with her eldest son.

There are letters from Mary Hawtrey to her sister-in-law, Joan Altham. Before Joan has become a widow, Mary Hawtrey writes to her from Riselip, in Middlesex, as to a misunderstanding that had arisen between Sir Edward Altham and his nephew by marriage, Oliver St. John. Mr. Hawtrey, Mr. Bankes (son-in-law to the Hawtreys), and Sir Thomas Leventhorpe on the one side, and Sir Gilbert Gerrard on the other, who had married Mary Barrington, do their best for the settlement of the trouble. Mary Hawtrey speaks of her 'nephew St. John's real desire of a peaceable end.' This Oliver St. John became afterwards a strong partisan on the side of the Parliament against the King. 'Things must go worse before they go better,' was his comment on the dissolution of the Short Parliament of 1640. He took a prominent part in the Commons on the trial of Strafford. In 1650 he was sent by Parliament with a 'stately embassy to the Hague,' with a view to union between England and Holland. We may believe that through the good offices of the relations of the two affectionate sisters-in-law, the family difference between uncle and nephew was settled. Oliver St. John was appointed Solicitor-General by the King (1641), and

*There were two vicars of Latton named Thomas Denne:—The first presented 18 June, 1600, left to become rector of Netteswell before 1634 and died there 1640; the second held the living (which was in the Althams gift), from 1632 to his death in 1680 or 1681. He was succeeded by Michael Altham, M.A.—Eds.

later, by the Commons, Lord Chief Justice of the Common Pleas (1648). By two of his three marriages he seems to have been of kin to Oliver Cromwell. His first wife was, as we have seen, Joan Altham, whose grandmother, Lady Barrington, was Cromwell's aunt.

After the death of Sir Edward Altham, the correspondence between the sisters-in-law is continued. Mary Hawtrey hears that her nephew, James Altham, is ill with the small-pox, and writes to Lady Altham, praying that

'The Lord will still continue your comfort that you have in him and in all the rest, which I besech God preserve from this infection. You have the benefit of a spatious house, which in such a time is very convenient.'

The 'plague' is around Riselip, and 'not far from us, almost as nere as laten hall is to you, in a place where many poor people live—9 are dead.'

Then comes upon the scene, a most interesting person, Mary Bankes, the daughter of the Hawtreys. There are several of her letters to her aunt Joan, who stood godmother to one of her children. She reports in one letter, the death of her beloved father, Ralph Hawtrey. In another, she says, 'I must congratulate my cosen Altham his safe recovery out of that unwelcom sicknes he was lately in.' In a third, she writes, 'It hath pleased his Ma^tie^ to call Mr. Bankes from the place he was in to another, in the passage to which by the accustomed manner he is to be called Sargaint; the solemnity of it this day was performed, and in memory of it he desiers your ladyship (as doth others of his loving freinds) to honor him with the wearing of a ring.' 'Mr. Bankes' later became Lord Chief Justice of Common Pleas to King Charles I., and this Lady Bankes, his wife, was afterwards known as the heroine of Corfe Castle. In *Highways and Byways in Dorset*, Sir Frederick Treves has described how Corfe Castle was, in the year 1643, in the possession of Sir John Bankes; how he was absent with King Charles at York; and how, when attacked by the soldiers of the Parliament, under Sir Walter Erle, the castle held out under the leadership of this brave woman from May till August. 'A demy cannon, a culverin, two sakers, and other ordnance' played upon the place 'both from the church tower and the adjacent hills,' yet she never yielded an inch. The last device of the assailants, Sir Frederick tells us, was the hiring of some hundred and fifty

'vinous' mariners to scale the walls, £20 being offered to the first man that should get in. All was to no purpose, and the siege had to be abandoned. There are no actual references to this memorable siege in the letters. John Altham says in a letter to his brother, 6 April 1639, 'My Lady Bankes desires her love may be remembered to you and your Lady.' Three and a half years after the siege, Joan Altham writes to her son James from London, 'My Lady Bankes and my nephew and

Photo by] LATTON CHURCH. *[Miss E. Rolleston.*

nieces remember themselves kindly to you, and they were all sorry your occasions would not let them enjoy your company. We were very kindly and finely entertained, and none but our own company.'

There is also a letter from Lady Bankes to her cousin James Altham, dated Riselip, 9 July, 1653, as to the sounding of a certain Lady Butler in regard to the marriage of her son, Lady Bankes having thought of him as a possible suitor for the hand of Mary Altham, the only child of James and Alice Altham. The young man 'desired a year or two more of freedom to himself,' but Lady Butler wished with all her heart to renew the 'ancient friendship' with the Altham family. Thus it appears that this

heroine of the civil war had by no means lost the common instincts of womanhood.

Lady Bankes died 11th April 1661, and was buried at Riselip Church, Middlesex, where there is an inscription, on white marble, in the chancel to her memory. Sir John Bankes died at Oxford in 1644, and was buried in the cathedral, Christ Church.

James Altham seems to have become the master of Mark Hall about 1636. He lived at first the life of an ordinary country gentleman, *e.g.*, he wants some hounds, and one John Watts procures from Mr. Sadler a hound of the name of Mounter and two puppies. He writes to Sir W. Masham at Otes, High Laver, who had become the second husband of his aunt, Elizabeth Altham, née Barrington, as to the felling of some trees on Thornwood Common, 'which,' he says,

'As you were informed, were annoyances to the road. They were anciently set there as marks to distinguish the parishes of Latton and Weald, and, as I am able to prove, have been so reputed to be for above 60 years, till of late years the inhabitants of Weald, for what advantage I know not, desiring to alter the bounds of their parish, have cut them up (as they pretend at your command), and placed another, and made a way there where never was any before, which being a great prejudice to my enheritance, I pulled up, with an intent to place trees there, to supply the offices of those which were taken away. For this we are presented at the Quarter Sessions. . . . I crave that Weald men may mend their own ways and not encroach upon my enheritance.'

By 1638, John Altham, the third son, is established as a counsellor at Gray's Inn, and letters pass between the two brothers. John keeps sending him the news of the day. On 7th March he writes, 'The news we now discourse upon is of the old subject, Scotland. The King [Charles I.] is resolved to go on March 27. The household goes away on Monday next. My Lord of Leicester is coming out of France, the cause is unknown.' There had been several duels, *e.g.*, Robert Paintons against a sectarian captain of Gray's Inn. 'Mr. Charles Cotton killed Sir John Hunt in the Strand.' On 20th January 1639, he reports, 'My Lord Finch* is for certain Lord Keeper, and Secretary Cooke is remitted to his office.' Finch as Chief Justice in 1638 had given judgment in the Hampden Ship Money Case. In another letter, John says,

*Afterwards Earl of Nottingham, and husband of Lady Essex Rich, of Leez.

'There is a rumour of the taking of Aberdeen.' . . 'I have here sent you the articles which the commissioners for the Covenanters did present to the King. The King's answer I have not seen, but have heard the relation of it to be, first, he answers that the acts of the assembly shall not be confirmed at the parliament, but before the parliament there shall be another assembly, when if the same acts be concluded upon, then the parliament shall confirm them. The 2nd is granted, the 3rd is granted, upon condition they disband their men and peaceably surrender all their forts and castles, and four is assured with a complement. . . It is generally reported that the King is now at Edinburgh, where he was received with great joy and acclamations.'

The Scots had demanded :—1. The abolition of the Court of High Commission. 2. The withdrawal of the Books of Canons and Common Prayer. 3. A free Parliament. 4. A free General Assembly. It looks as if John Altham's four points referred to these.

James Altham now becomes mixed up with public affairs. A Commission of Forests had been appointed, and were exacting money from landowners for their encroachments on Crown Lands. James Altham on 13 Feb., 1639, writes to his brother, John :—

'I heare from Dr. Ofhobstowe (who had it from Mr. Jaggard) that myself and some others that were in Commission about Hatfield Forest are in the Starre Chamber, for what I know not, but would willingly learne. Therefore, I pray let mee entreat you to goe to him, for he is now in London, and know of him uppon what grounds he reported it. And if you find it to be so, I pray repair to Mr. Cockshott, and informe yourself as well as you can, whoe they are that are our adversaries, and what the greatest charge in the List is, and whether it be best for me to answer with the rest jointly, or by myself,' etc.

There are more letters of interest as to Scotland, but space forbids extracts. Here is a short extract from the loyal Thomas Smith, of Horham Hall, to his brother-in-law, John Altham.

'His Majesty can no waies hinder, but our minds will bring us up to London this next week, unless he be graciously pleased to alter his day in going to the Parliament, which if there be any alteration, I desire you to let me know.'

In 1642, the Civil War broke out, and there are few letters for three years. James Altham was, we know not where, quite likely fighting for the King. Certainly he was fined £500*

* *Cal. St. Pap. Dom. Com. for Comp.*, p. 879, where he is said to have been in the King's Quarters, but did not bear arms.—Eds.

by a Committee of Parliament for being a 'Delinquent,' and was made a Knight of the Bath at the Restoration for the part he had taken. Fuller in his *Worthies of England* (1662) makes mention of him, 'He addeth with his accomplished civility to the honor of his ancestors.' But the following letter from his wife, Alice Altham, to her brother-in-law John, the counsellor, written from London 12 Dec., 1643, shows what the wife of a loyal Cavalier had to go through :—

'Most Deere Brother, the thancks that is due to you for your care of mee and mine cannot be expressed in this peece of paper, but I hope you will doe me that writt to be hath of my ambition to desarve it from you. I have sent you sir thomas barringtown leter which I desire you to seale and send by John Cass, if you think it will doe any good, for I would doe anything to gitt that litell alowance settled which is aloted mee by the higher powers, that soe I might goe to my deere Husband, but if it cannot be don very spedly I shall very hardly be persuaded to stay, for I have not hard from him this five weeks, nor if I stay heare I am not like to doe so not douting of y^r^ care to gitt that litell settled which they think fitt to alowe mee, I rest your sistr and sarvant AA.'

If Alice Altham was troubled at receiving no letter from her husband for five weeks, equally so was James at receiving nothing from her. He writes to her a month later, 12th Jan., 1644, from some town, he does not say where :—

'My dearest, To the many letters I have sent thee, I have at last received an answer. I cannot believe I have been soe much neglected, or forgotten, but that thou hast writt more, though I have been soe unfortunate as to receive but one, tis possible mine might fall under y^e^ same fate y^t^ I beelieve y have if they have, I confesse wee have both cause to lament y^e^ sad obstructions of these times in y^t^ particular as well as in many other.' He finds his 'reputation wounded by a hand so neare' him. 'I am confident,' he says, 'noe passion durst cast a preiudice uppon mee. . . My design of seeing thee must yett a while be suspended.' He ends with a touching reference to their only child. 'I sent soe large a remembrance to little blacke eyes in my last, that I question whether they bee all delivered yett, therefore now I shall send her nothing but my blessing.'

In March 1644, Lady Altham was at Mark Hall. She writes to her son John, at Gray's Inn, on the 26th of that month, as to his brother Emanuel's extravagances. He had been writing to her for money. She adds an interesting piece of information about Latton.

'All ye newes heare is yt the crosse on our steeple is taken downe, and ye sanct belly [sanctus belfry] allso taken away and all our treyned bands warned to goe wth all speed to Walden, but what to doe or whethere to goe is not yet knowne wth us.'

Edward Altham, another son, intended to be ordained, and at one time was not without hope that his eldest brother would present him to the parish of Buckland, in Hertfordshire, of which he was the patron. He had not yet become a Roman Catholic, and had been studying abroad. He writes on 24th Sept. 1644, to his brother James :—

"I trust I shall never be taunted with the foule corruption of the vulgar that boast of a spirit and yet senceless; that teach and yet untaught; and that pray and yet not understand. These are the locusts that trouble our Church and will destroy it, if God calles not a strong winde to dissipate them.'

The fourth son, Leventhorp, who was, I believe, apprenticed to a wine merchant at Rouen, speaks in a letter written from that place, 3rd March 1645, of his joy at hearing of the continuance of her ladyship's health, and preservation in the 'troublous and distracted days, the which God in His mercy continue to you and all the reste of our neare and deare ffreindes wth you; and in his good tyme convert these daies of moornninge and affliction into daies of joy.'

I have a letter dated Gray's Inn, 24th July, 1645 (?) (there is a little doubt as to the last figure, but I gather from the contemporary history that it must be 5), from one P. Mayeer to John Altham, who was then staying at Mark Hall, which seems to tell of Altham money having been devoted to the king's cause.

'I received by your servant £40 the 10th of this presente monthe; the same day I paide Lieutenante Hayles tenn poundes, whiche hee desired mee to pay him for his Capts use . . . and I have sente the other thirty poundes by bill of exchaunge to Capt Bantry for his use, and I have requested him to see itt paide where hee owethe the same. . . . I am sorry if you and your ffamily bee out of charity wth mee, I knowe noe just cause, unlesse yr brother takes itt ill I lost his Caveilers cloake. I am ready to restore him any satisffaction for itt. . . . There are soe many victoryes, that I professe truly I knowe not howe to remember them. This afternoone order came from ye Maior to have all the Bells runge for ioy of Bridgewater beinge taken, and just this minute the talke is that pte of Basinge is taken—all is taken. You see how God fights for his.'

The last words would seem to be Mayeer's report of the talk of London, and not to be his own sentiments.

In June 1647, there was a pause in the Civil War, and much dissension between the Army and the Parliament. On June 25th the Army was in full march on London. Cromwell (who since the war had tried to mediate between the two) had now been driven to seek refuge with the Army, for the Parliament had fallen furiously upon him. The Army had in 'an Humble Representation' declared they only wanted the Peace of the kingdom, and no interference with the settling of the Presbyterian Government. It was with a view to peace that they demanded the expulsion of eleven members from the Commons, with Holles at their head, whom the soldiers charged with stirring up strife between the Army and the Parliament, and with a design of renewing the Civil War. After fruitless negotiations, the terror of the Londoners forced the eleven members to withdraw, and the Houses named Commissioners to treat on the questions at issue. Here is a contemporary letter from John Altham, the counsellor, on this matter, written to his brother James, who was now once more at Mark Hall. It is dated 26 June 1647.

'S^{r}, y^{e} last night soe soone almost as I parted from you I did receive a note from y^{e} Lady Wortly that Mr. Deereham is come to towne and shall stay till thursday next. S^{r} yesterday the house of Commons had a long debate concerning y^{e} eleven members, when the debate began they modestly withdrew, it continued till neere four at night, therefore the house cannot suspend these men wthout a high breach of those lawes they have soe oft bound themselves to maintaine. Y^{e} debate ended, they returned againe, and then Mr. Hollis in the name of y^{e} rest desired that they might have leave to sequester themselves (yet promising to attend y^{e} house when they should be called upon) and that those of y^{m} that had a desire to travel might have leave. I doe not heare anything was ordered upon this motion, but they left to their discretion. This day all the lawiers of y^{e} house are desired to meete, to advise how farre it may stand wth y^{e} honour of these men to sequester themselves. The Army approacheth, some of their quarters y^{e} last night extended to Edmonton. S^{r} farewell, my service to all, especially to y^{e} Gentleman that desires to be found in tonbridge water. Yours, J. A.'

In 1648 there was a renewal of the war, Wales and the eastern counties being the fields of conflict. After a solemn prayer-meeting, Cromwell and Sir Thomas Fairfax set forth, the former against the Welsh royalists, while the latter imprisoned many of the eastern royalists within the walls of

Colchester. But even the sound of war in Essex did not deter the affectionate Lady Altham from exercising a mother's care for her daughter, Lady Halton, who was expecting the birth of a child. Accordingly she set forth early in July (driven, it would seem, by her nephew, Sir John Leventhorpe*) for Little Sampford, where was the seat of her son-in-law, Sir William Halton. She rested for two nights at Mark Hall, having started, it seems, from London. The following letter written to her eldest son James, the owner of Mark Hall, who was at the time lodging in Chancery Lane, gives an account of her journey, and is dated 'Samf. the iv. of July, 1648.'

'Good sonne, According to my promise and your desire I shall give you an account of our journey and safe arrivall the first night at Marke Hall where we found all well and quiet, I thank God, and wanted nothing but y^e^ good company of you and my daughter, w^h^ your good neighbours and frindes hope they [may] inioy ere it bee longe, for Mr. Denne and others think there is noe danger, but y^t^ you might safely come down and stay without any disturbance, and wee findinge all quiet, made Sir John willing to stay and have his horses rested one day, for they had a very bad iourny and found the ways very bad, and the waters very high at Stansteed and Roydon, but past them through safely, I humbly thank God, and we lay at free quarter 2 nights at Mark Hall, which I intended not to have done, but your servant, John Casse, told mee it was your will to have it so, for which we returne all our due thanks in generall, and my own in particular, and having had so good a bait on Saturday, we went to Samford, where I thank God we arrived safely, and found no trouble but the foule ways, and they were worse now than ever I see them, but Sir John's horses carried us very well through them, and hee himselfe went very kindly along with us, and is this day returned back again to Shingle Hall, and intends, and please God, very shortly, to bee at London, for he begins to think now that Mr. Mince is worthy the looking after. I pray God bless and guide him in all his ways and undertakings, and I hope as any occasion is offered, you will not bee wanting in your best advice to him, and therefore your counsel and advice is like to take the better effect, and therefore hope you will ever afford it to him. I pray, send such news as is stirring, for whether it be good or bad it will help to pass away the time in this solitary place, where there is no taking of horses now, nor any other trouble but sending away provision, which it is feared will make great scarcitie in these parts, if y^e^ seigh continue much longer, but it is certainly reported by many

* He died unmarried, aged 20, of smallpox, in Chancery Lane, and was buried at Sawbridgeworth, 2 Dec., 1549. His brother Thomas succeeded.—Eds.

that hath been lately at Colechester, y^t^ they are in a very good condition and want nothinge but peace and love w^t^ there enemies, w^h^ I beseech God send in all places in his good time. Your sister Halton presents her kynd love and respects to you and your best beloved, and so dothe shee her love and best of blessings to you both, and to pretty sweet Mall, who is

Deere Sonne

Your loving Mothere ever

Joa': Altham.

I pray present my kynd love and service to my frindes y^t^ aske after mee.'

She writes again to James in August:—

'Deere Sonne, although I have little or noe businesse at this time to rite of, yet hearinge you were to cōe to Marke hall this last weeke, I could not omitte y^e^ salutinge of you w^th^ some few lines and congratulate your happie returne thethere, where I hope I shall heare you are all safe and well, and hope you shall long continue so, though troubles continue still in y^e^ country and wee may feare like to doe so still, for Cholechester is not yet taken, nor like to bee yet, as wee heare, but it is sayd y^e^ newes at y^e^ leagure is they can take it, but S^r^ Tho. in mercie still spares them, and how true y^t^ is I leave it to you and others to iudge, but however it is, I pray God bee there comfort, and send them a happie conclution.'

We know, however, it was in this very month of August that Colchester surrendered to Fairfax.

In a postcript she says—'I desire you to send mee word by this bearer whether you have received any mony of my lord Bridgwater and if you have, my sonne Halton is desirus to have 400 of it, for hee hath now compounded for his estate and is to pay all his mony w^t^ in y^e^ fourtnight, and if hee can have it of his frinds hee had rathere deale w^t^ them then strangers, etc.'

On the 21st of August Lady Altham pens another letter to her son James, who appears to have remained in London, on the subject of the money from Lord Bridgewater. Her son John had been down to Sampford. She announces in the quaint phraseology of the day:—

'Your sister Hal was safely brought to bed on Wednessday last of a daughter. It is pretty well. I most hu^m^bly thanke God, and this day my brother, * Hal, and Mrs. Roper and my selfe made it a Mary.'

But in the following month Lady Halton died, aged 26, and was buried at Little Sampford, Sept. 30. There is a monument

*Probably the Rev. Charles Leventhorpe, Rector of White Roding, who succeeded his two nephews in 1679, and died in 1680, being the last baronet of the name.

to her memory in the church, bearing date December, 1649, which apparently was the date of its erection, as it does not agree with the date in the Burial Register, Sept. 30, 1648.*

* The date of her death is given in G. E. Cockayne's *Complete Baronetage* as 29 Dec., 1644, which, in view of the foregoing letter and the entry in the register, must, we think, be deemed inaccurate.—Eds.

MET. BOROUGH OF POPLAR PUBLIC LIBRARIES

SHELLS IN OUR RIVERS AND DITCHES.*

BY EVANGELINE BRADHURST.

COLCHESTER, so long famous for its 'native oysters,' the annual 'feast' of which is looked forward to by those lucky enough to receive the Mayor's invitation, has yet other treasures to boast of, unnoticed and uncared for by the gastronomic, yet to lovers of conchology far more interesting. Without some slight knowledge of their whereabouts, these are not easy to discover, although so close at hand.

Will not the children of Essex add a new interest to their so-called dull country walks, and busy themselves and 'read, mark, and learn' out of some standard work, a little about the slender, lovely objects they pass by in the rivers and ditches of Essex? To search for, and collect fresh-water and land Mollusca, is a delight unthought of by those who pass heedlessly by dainty and oftentimes rare specimens.

To those who only love the country in 'smiling spring' and summer I have nothing to say. Butterflies are only happy in sunshine. But those who will walk in drear cold autumn, aye, even in rain and storm, and still enjoy Nature, let them come, in spirit at least, with me. In autumn, I find my treasures; only then dare I hunt for the dainty untenanted houses, free, 'to let,' which are a delight to possess, without fear of depriving any owner of his castle. In the thirst for knowledge there is ever the danger that one may become cruel, from thoughtlessness. 'I would not number in my list of friends, the man who heedlessly would set his foot upon a worm.' Therefore, carefully examine each shell, before adding it to your collection, ascertain that it is a derelict, and 'not wanted'; do not be

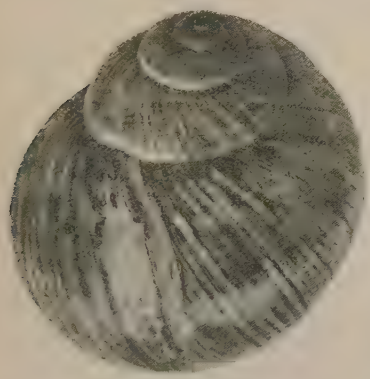
* This article is in part reprinted from *Country Life* of 17th August, 1907, by kind permission of the Editor, Mr. P. Anderson Graham.

inconsiderate and cruel, even to a snail. Come, on an October day, down to the bottom of a mossy ditch with water, a small stream running slowly at the bottom, put one foot on each side—stretching like the Colossus at Rhodes—across the chasm, and look 'bright eyes,' for the hidden interests near by. Then, on an emerald cushion, a roundish object—what an admirable form!—with black bands running perfectly round the coil; this is the house of Helix nemoralis, now discarded and dry; it may be picked up and treasured, without fear of robbing the 'master of the house,' for he has changed his residence for a newer castle, and retired for the winter. Near it, will probably be found the whole-coloured shell, of a most delicate cameo pink, or pale sulphur yellow—the shell of Helix hortensis; at times even, his house is all pure white. How convenient to change the colour of one's mansion by the food one eats! The large brown speckled and mottled palace of Helix aspersa is easy to see—the old 'Hodman-Dod,' of the country people; but look at it carefully, with great attention, for only the practised eye will discover on the brown shell a 'patch,' where the owner has had to do his own repairing, and finely indeed has he restored his shattered house. If past mending, he leaves it, and makes another mansion; but if it has only been cracked or bruised, he sets to work to ooze liquid gum out of his store (from whence also came the shell), and neatly welds the cracks together. Where the shattered part has been pieced together, the beautiful brown pattern is now irregular on the shell.

The delicate Helix cantiana I found on a railway embankment, under the picturesque Viaduct at Chappel, a name which has now absorbed that of old Pontisbright. What a contrast in movement—the Cantiana slowly and noiselessly creeping below, while the iron horse roars and rushes by above his small hermitage! The large white edible snail, Helix pomatia, was found in that large fox-cover, Chalkney Wood, Earls Colne, not far from Colchester. His handsome smooth white castle was always formerly to be found where the Romans had their colonies, for they cultivated the dainty morsel, as the French do to this day. Only last year in Paris, I purchased good specimens of H. pomatia, and our old brown H. aspersa, in the Rue de Rivoli, and great was the astonishment of the girl

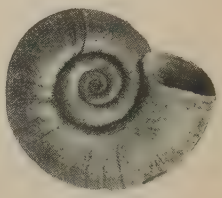
vendor, when I asked to have only the empty shells! Their late tenants were fried and garnished with parsley and butter, exposed for sale on large dishes in the streets, and in the greengrocer's windows. Pomatia is now rarely seen in Essex, and the 'master' is hardly ever found alive, only his empty shell. In Kent, he still flourishes, but an attempt to introduce living specimens into Suffolk has not been very successful.

Now to the river, to look for a perfect harvest of fine forms. To collect river shells with success, go after heavy rains, and when the floods have dried up, and the waters are 'being assuaged,' look upon the grass fields, scratch in the drift wood, then what a multitude of minute thin shells, more numerous than the sea shells, but how different their texture! The sea snail-shells I have, are exceedingly thick and strong, whereas these river beauties are so fragile, that they can be compared to nothing but tissue paper in fineness. Well may the sea-snails, their relations, have houses with such stout walls that a hammer would be required to crack them, for have they not to bear the force and fret of the waves? Well, indeed, may they be substantial. Dear, fragile river specimens! The tiny spiral Cochlicopa lubrica is so minute, it is not larger than that summer insect the Apion, and others still smaller must be found with a magnifier. That flat round shell, the Planorbis corneus, is like a doll's-house rope coiled up; the baby Planorbis vortex, of the same shape, is most minute, like a flat coil of cotton; and the medium-sized brother, Planorbis umbilicatus, in dimensions, comes between these two. A spiral shell, of a good size and very pointed tip, the Limnæa stagnalis, is most noticeable; but for lovely form and exquisite colouring, a creamy hue like the groundwork of a valuable Doulton vase, observe that queen of the fresh-water shells, the aristocratic Limnæa auricularia (see illustration on next page).



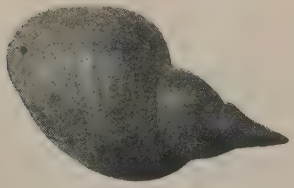
HELIX POMATIA
(*see repair on shell done by snail*).

The number of tiny shells the caddis fly envelope collects is a museum of study in itself. In my caddis fly's discarded home, on the empty tube, I count the shells of Bithynia leachii, Valvata piscinalis, Valvata cristata and Sphærium corneum, all so small that the whole collection would easily rest on a threepenny bit! The 'Titan among such minnows' is Bithynia tentaculata, in comparison with which a common house-fly would appear as a giant. Tentaculata is in shape very much like the ordinary sea whelk shell, and is sometimes found of a black hue. The delicate marking of reddish spots on Pyramidula rotundata, and the fine brown lines of the Pisidium amnicum, should be carefully noticed. Then, the fresh-water limpet is a millet seed in size, Ancylus fluviatilis, and again the Hygromia hispida brings one back to the Helix shape of the shell, and is variously named Helix hispida and Helix concinna. The easiest shell of all to find is the large bivalve, Anodonta cygnæa, with its wonderful opal colouring inside; it is 3in. to 4in. long, and 2in. across, or even larger; often it is found in ponds and largely devoured by ducks—doubtless they consider it quite equal in flavour to our oyster! This shell is often to be bought in shops, exposed for sale, defaced by having so-called pictures painted on its mother-of-pearl-like surface, the opalescent background being too tempting to the dilettante artist to resist.

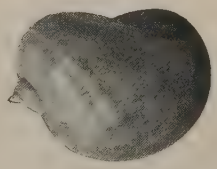


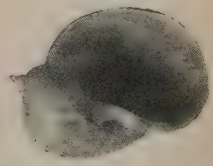
PLANORBIS CORNEUS.

PLANORBIS VORTEX.



LIMNÆA STAGNALIS.





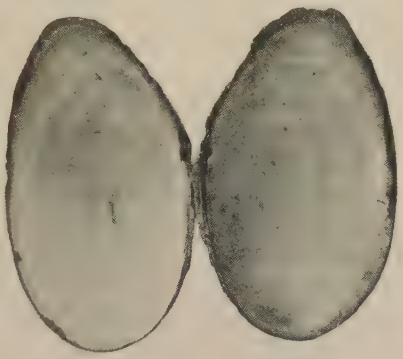
LIMNÆA AURICULARIA.

Need I enumerate more of this host of inhabitants of the little world so seldom explored? In this glimpse of land and fresh-water shells, have I not said enough to prove that there is ample

repayment for the lover of Nature, who will take the trouble to go down into the ditches on each side of the King's highway, and

BITHYNIA TENTACULATA.

PISIDIUM AMNICUM.



ANODONTA CYGNÆA.

to the small country rivers, and see the wonders to be found there ?

NOTES AS TO GREAT LEIGHS REGISTERS, 1560 to 1760.

BY REV. ANDREW CLARK, LL.D.

THE compilation of an index to the earlier centuries of Great Leighs Registers brings out some general facts which seem of interest in themselves and deserve comparison with similar records for other places in Essex.

1. The Registers are in good preservation, and practically every entry can still be made out. But the record is very meagre in all cases, and it is plain that, from time to time, the entries of one or more months, or even for the greater part of a year, are absent. The practice seems to have been to make a note of the baptism, etc., on a slip of paper, and afterwards to transcribe these notes into the parchment Register. But the slips must often have been lost before transcription. Such gaps are especially evident during the last illnesses of incumbents, and the subsequent vacancies. For purposes of strict vital statistics, the numbers given by the Registers are, therefore, valueless, being distinctly below the true numbers by an unknown and variable percentage.

2. So far as the numbers go, they exhibit a singular equality between the sexes. For the two hundred years, 1561-1760, the fully stated entries are:—

Baptisms:—Males, 1,268; females, 1,128; i.e., an excess of males over females of only 140.

Burials:—Males, 827; females, 824; i.e., an excess of males of only 3.

3. Taking into account those entries which are so imperfectly stated as to leave it uncertain whether the baptism or burial is of a boy or a girl, we have, for 1561-1760, 2,389 baptisms, i.e., just under 12 a year; and 1,694 burials, i.e., just over 8 a year. Allowing for the deficiencies of the Registers, we may take the birth-rate of the parish to average 16 yearly; and the death-rate, 12. The number of inhabitants was probably stationary, the natural increase passing away by migration to other parishes.

4. The Registers show a distinct decrease in the number of baptisms, and a distinct increase in the number of burials, as between the two centuries.

	Baptisms.	*Burials.*
1561-1660]	1250	776
1661-1760]	1137	875
	113 decrease	99 increase

5. Taking the records of baptisms only, we find 1,273 baptismal names of males; 1,127 of females. In each case a very few names engross a very large proportion of persons.

John occurs 309 times, Thomas 168, William 128, Richard 89, Robert 88. This leaves only 491 boys to be distributed among 75 other names.

In the same way Mary occurs 242 times, Elizabeth 179, Sarah 152, Anne 86. This leaves only 466 girls to be distributed among 58 other names.

As regards those other names few points call for notice. There is a tendency in the late seventeenth and in the early eighteenth centuries to impose less usual Scripture names, *e.g.*, of boys, Hezekiah (1659), Abner (1703), Philemon (1718), Ezra (1727); and of girls, Eunice (1671), Philadelphia (1714). Classical names are Cæsar (1578), Lucretia (1718). The adoption of surnames to serve as baptismal names is seen in Grosvenor (1657) and Hayward (1749). Double names begin for boys

with Adam-Keble (1677, surname Eve, a gentleman); and for girls Anne-Stuart (1717, Townson, the Rector). The first treble name is Henry-Owen-John (1727, surname Clapton). Notice may be taken of Melicent as a boy's name, first found in 1628, and repeated afterwards in the family of Whitlock, and of Thomasin, as a girl's name, first found in 1701. Constance occurs as a boy's name in the baptisms of 1562, but in the boy's burial it appears as Constantine. In 1595 the clerk has written Ciena as a girl's name, and in 1626 Kollam as a boy's name. Are Selina and Columba too wild guesses for these? And what is the true name of the lady who married in 1586 as 'Marcinight' (Tower)? A naive confession of the Rev. John Townson shows us that these odd names are sometimes due to other causes than mis-spelling. Recording the baptism (1720) of 'Bedrus' Warwicker, he adds a note:—'This child was design'd to be call'd *Beatrix*; but, by the mistake of its witnesses, who were positive for the other name, she was baptized as register'd.' A modern parallel occurred in an Oxford parish in 1881, when the clerk, re-inforced by the clergyman, could obtain from the god-parents only an indistinct 'rodiony' as the proposed name, accompanied by a refusal either to spell it or write it. The girl was baptized 'Rhodione,' but, as afterwards appeared, 'Rhoda Annie' had been intended.

6. The surnames which occur in the two hundred years amount, disregarding all minor differences of spelling, to nearly 750. This shows that the population was a migratory one, a family coming into the parish and going out again after a short stay. A surname seldom remains long in residence, and a sequence of three generations (father, son, grandson) is very rare. The two most bulky names are, Barnard (1567 to 1752) comprising about 50 members from first to last, and Middleton (1579 to 1745) comprising about 40 members. Having regard to this migratory spirit, are we to interpret the local jingle, written by the clerk within the cover of the Marriage Register which begins in 1754—

'Great Leighes, if you plese;
You must down on your knees,'

as a prayer for speedy removal from the parish, or a thanksgiving for having arrived in it?

The surnames can mostly be identified as still in existence in the district. The following, however, seem to be extinct :— Clamtree, Cundlit, Fitzhewes, Foujohn, Highmas (Hymas), Ipse, Jirkyn, Outing, Peartree, Selfscale, Spilman, Spiltimber, Stathurne, Stepkin, Terling, Thedam, Winterflood.

Of the puzzling set of names connected by *alias*, we have Smith *alias* Barker, Spooner *alias* Burle, Youngman *alias* Clarke, Collect *alias* Danish, Uprichard *alias* Hughes, Kent *alias* Reynolds.

7. The entries exhibit clearly (*a*) great mortality in child-bed, and (*b*) great mortality of infants and children of under three years. Families are not exceptionally large. Families of seven or eight are not infrequent, but families of ten or over for one husband and wife are rare. There are several recorded cases of twins, but they seldom survive the first weeks of life. There is one case of triplets, born 20th January, buried 25th January 1727.

A somewhat pathetic custom is that of keeping alive certain names in families. Thus if a child John dies, that name is often given to the next boy who is born ; if a child Mary dies, that name is often given to the next girl born. Thus, John and Joan Grene had a son John, baptised November, buried December 1569 ; they named their next child John, baptized 13th January, but buried 25th January 1572. William and Elizabeth Harding had a daughter Judith, baptized 1721, buried 1722 ; they named their next daughter Judith, baptized 20th December 1724.

THE ESSEX COUNTY SPORTS AND AMATEUR CHAMPIONSHIPS.

THE phenomenal success which has attended the Essex County Sports, held in the grounds of the Bishop of Colchester, at Chelmsford in the summer of each year, has been a matter upon which the committee of management have been warmly congratulated season after season.

On at least three occasions the Lord Mayor and Mayoress of London have attended in state, and it was in 1891 that His Serene Highness Prince Francis of Teck honoured the

competitors by distributing the prizes. His brother, Prince Alexander George of Teck, had previously attended the meeting, in 1899, when the Sultan M. Khan of Afghanistan was also induced by the Bishop of Colchester to honour the gathering with a visit.

The full name of the Institution which is responsible for the carrying out of the annual athletic festival is the Essex County Cycling and Athletic Association. It was formed in 1883 at a public meeting held at Chelmsford, at the instigation of Mr. Robert Cook, who was appointed hon. secretary and treasurer, which posts he has filled ever since.

The first three gatherings were held on the Romford track, but since then they have invariably been located in the delightful grounds of the Bishop of Colchester at Chelmsford.

The 27th annual contests for the Essex Amateur Championships will be held at Chelmsford on Saturday, July 18th, when the prizes will be distributed by Mrs. Lockwood, wife of Colonel the Right Honourable Mark Lockwood, P.C., C.V.O., M.P., who has accepted the presidency of the Association for 1908, and in whose hands the meeting will undoubtedly lose none of its former lustre.

The following is a list of the Championships competed for each year, with the names of the present holders :—

Name of Championship.	Holder
1 Mile Bicycle.....	J. B. Taylorson, Beaumont Cy. C.
¼ Mile Flat	H. S. Harmer, Southend Harriers
1 Mile Flat	L. D. Drysdale, Essex Beagles
2 Miles Walk	Alfred Pooley, Essex Beagles
100 Yards Flat	H. S. Harmer, Southend Harriers

The winner of each Championship receives a gold medal of the value of five guineas, and holds one of the five Twenty Guinea Championship Cups for twelve months.

These cups have to be won three times in succession, or four times in all, before becoming the actual property of a competitor. No less than 15 of these cups have been won outright during the past 20 years. The donors of the present championship cups are :—The Right Honourable the Earl of Warwick (Lord Lieutenant of Essex), Sir Thos. Fowell Buxton, Bart., G.C.M.G., Thomas Usborne, Esq., J.P., Jas. N. Paxman, Esq., J.P., and the Right Honourable Lord Blyth.

Another interesting feature in the list of events is the three miles flat race for the fifty-guinea Atalanta Cup, presented for annual competition by J. H. A. Marshall, Esq., in 1899.

The contest is restricted to amateurs residing in England, just as the county championships are restricted to bona fide amateurs living in Essex. The cup was held for the first six years in succession by Alfred Shrubb, undoubtedly the fastest long distance runner the world has known in modern times. In 1902, when Mr. Shrubb was the 4 and 10 miles Amateur Champion of England, he won the race in 14 min. 25 secs., and thereby constituted a 'world's' grass record for that distance. In 1906 Mr. Shrubb was ineligible to compete, he having joined the professional ranks, and the trophy was won that year by Mr. F. H. Hulford, the then four miles amateur champion of England. The present holder is Mr. A. J. Robertson, of the Birchfield Harriers.

GOLD CHAMPIONSHIP MEDAL.

The grass track on which the race meeting is held each year is considered one of the best and fastest in the country. This opinion is substantiated by the fact that several world's records have been made on it in recent years. The last established was on July 20th, 1907, when Mr. Oswald Groenings, the then 120 yards amateur hurdle champion of England, won the final heat of the 300 yards open hurdle handicap in 37⅘ seconds, a world's record for that distance.

There are three especial causes which have materially contributed to the unprecedented success of the Association and its annual sports. Starting in a modest way with but one championship race, the sports have increased in interest and

importance every succeeding year, until they now hold the premier position among British county athletic festivals. When spectators were few on the inaugural day, the President, the late O. E. Coope, Esq., M.P., presented the Association with the first championship cup, and since then the leading public men of

ATALANTA CUP.

the county have succeeded yearly to the office of president. The Bishop of Colchester and Mrs. Johnson have also done much to promote the enjoyment of the meetings, by entertaining each July, the principal visitors at the sports in their charming gardens adjoining the Athletic Grounds.

The second of the main causes of success is the confidence which the leading athletes in Essex, and the country generally, have in the Executive Committee of the Association. They know that the prizes offered are among the best to be obtained anywhere, that the pick of the English officials have control of the events, and that they will meet with the fairest of treatment.

Lastly, the Association has been exceptionally favoured in the person of its Hon. Secretary and Treasurer, Mr. Robert Cook, to whose persistency, enthusiasm and powers of organisation its continuous progress has been mainly due. A capable sportsman, who, in his younger days, was one of the best all round athletes in Essex, Mr. Cook has, for more than a quarter of a century, worked, without fee or reward, to promote pure amateur athletics, and has lived to see his pet hobby, the 'County Sports,' attain a position that no one could possibly have predicted twenty years ago.

He has always had the happy knack and good fortune to secure the assistance and co-operation of the leading members of all the principal amateur clubs of the county, and it is to be hoped that he and his merry men will, for many years to come, retain for the Association the high position that it has won in the athletic world.

THE ESSEX TERRITORIAL FORCE IN 1608.

BY REV. ANDREW CLARK, LL.D.

IN the present year, 1908, 8 Edward VII., the volunteer forces, which had sprung up in Essex in the preceding reign, have been re-constituted as a Territorial Force in intimate relation with the county. The happy discovery by Dr. C. H. Firth, Regius Professor of Modern History at Oxford, of an official letter-book of the Deputy-Lieutenants of Essex enables us to place alongside of present organisation and present difficulties the County Territorial Force of 300 years ago, as it was constituted and as it was being reorganised in 1608, 5 Jac. I., and subsequent years.

Our enquiry naturally starts with the question as to the source and strength of this force. In James I.'s time the stewards of manors still carefully compiled the old feudal lists

of tithing-men, or decenars, as they were sometimes called, who owed allegiance through the manorial court to the sovereign. When these lists were brought together, they supplied for the whole county a census of males of the working classes between the ages of sixteen and sixty, any of whom, in theory, might be impressed for military service. The ordinary formula for musters directed the Lord Lieutenant to provide himself with such a list of possible conscripts, as well as of men actually under arms, ordering him to 'cause a generall view to be taken of all the forces in the county, both horse and foote, and therein to observe that perfect notice be taken and inrollment made of all the numbers, trayned and untrayned.' In 1619, writing to his Deputy-Lieutenant from his house at Bracknell in Berkshire, where he is detained by sickness, the Lord Lieutenant (Robert Ratcliffe, fifth Earl of Sussex, whose chief seat was at Newhall in Boreham parish) says, 'I make noe doubt but you have trayned all from syxteene to threescore; if not, you have done your selves a greate deale of wronge and mee too, for it is soe in all other shires throughout England.' It was part of the duty of the petty constables to make return yearly or half-yearly of such men on the tithing-lists as were fittest, physically and otherwise, to bear arms, if required. The Suffolk return of 1615, while enumerating 145 horse and 3,782 foot in the trained bands, adds 'able men, 10,527.'

The obligation to provide arms and pay for the militia was one of the burdens imposed since feudal times on property in land. From time to time the Deputy-Lieutenants in the county and the Bailiffs in the municipalities took the most recent subsidy-roll, as a convenient rating-book, and made out lists of persons who, singly or in groups, should be charged with 'finding arms,' *i.e.* providing weapons according to regulation, and either serving with them or paying a man, or man and horse, to serve in their stead. The lands of the beneficed clergy were subject to the same charge, only the assessment on them was imposed by their diocesan, the Bishop of London. In May 1619, 'for refusinge to serve in person with his owne armes,' John Througood of Goldhanger was 'convented at the [Privy] Councell Table and soe committed to the Fleete' until he submitted and promised future obedience. It was a special instruction to the officers to see that substitutes were chosen

from substantial people, and not from mere men-servants. In 1613 Sir Francis Barrington and Sir Gamaliel Capell, Deputy-Lieutenants, instruct the captains to make their companies 'fullie compleate, both with servicable men and, as conveniently as may bee, with such freeholders, fermors, and housholders as are fittinge.' Men in the trained bands were protected from being impressed for foreign service.

Essex was, by tradition, charged with the maintenance, in readiness to take the field, of 4,000 foot and 250 horse. In 1608 the foot were portioned into 20 companies of 200 men, each under a captain. The number of men in a company had been fixed by 'an expresse order by the Privie Councell concerninge the distribution and proporcioninge of all our foote bands to one certaine number.' The number of companies had originally some reference to the old division of the county into 19 hundreds or half-hundreds, with the addition of a company for the one considerable borough, Colchester. The original connection of the hundred and its company of foot is shown by the fact that the hundred, as a unit, had, in some instances, to 'find arms.' On 9 July 1621, the Deputy-Lieutenants ordered that, in addition to the personal claim on them, landowners should also pay their rateable share to the arms 'found by the hundred':—'We hold fit and doe order that those persons that doe finde private armor, must contribute with the rest of the inhabitants where they dwell towards the charge of the hundred armes, if any such bee within theire hundred.' On 18 Aug. 1621, the captain of the company for Rochford hundred, in regard that 'such corsletts of your band as were wont to be found by the hundred, called *hundred corsletts*, are for the most parte wantinge, and [the rest] thereof defective and unservicable,' that hundred was ordered to levy £20 'for the buyinge and provision of the aforesaid armes and furniture.' The inequalities in size and resources between the hundreds had led, however, to several practical modifications of the idea that each division should furnish one company. The hundred of Freshwell, the half-hundred of Clavering, and the liberty of Havering do not appear, being merged probably in the hundreds of Hinckford, Uttlesford, and Becontree. The half-hundred of Harlow and the half-hundred of Waltham were joined together to furnish a company. Hinckford hundred, containing populous

towns engaged in woollen manufacture, furnished no less than three companies. The hundreds of Lexden and Tendring, in addition to supplying their own companies, furnished each 100 men to form a separate company under a separate captain. In August 1611, the Lord Lieutenant condemned this arrangement as causing 'charge and labour' through 'the remote habitations of the captain,' and recommended that the 100 Tendring men should be attached to the existing Tendring company and the 100 Lexden men to the Lexden company. The Deputy-Lieutenants in vain urged the order of Privy Council already mentioned, and that if two captains have their companies raised to 300 strong, 'such an unequallity or disproporcion will procure a just offence and dislike amonge the rest, who are noe doubt, or at least will deeme themselves to bee, as well worthy soe great a command.' This made the number of companies 19. The men furnished by the clergy were not counted in with the companies.

During the decrepitude of Queen Elizabeth there had been no difficulty in supplying the four thousand men. The trained men were allowed to muster with such obsolete weapons as bills and bows, and, if their numbers fell short, untrained men were paraded to complete the files. After the accession of James I. the Privy Council, acting as the War Office of the day, insisted that the whole Territorial Force should have undergone training and should be armed with regulation pike or fire-arm. The increased efficiency, according to the Deputy-Lieutenants, ought to have entitled the county to a reduction of its foot to 3,000 men. 26 March 1613, the Deputy-Lieutenants sent the Lord Lieutenant 'a certificate of all the trayned foote bands, by which your Lordship may perceive that the same are now more in number and better furnished a great deale than at any time heretofore, though the number of 4,000 be not fully compleate, 2,000 of which beinge formerly of the untrayned companies, and a great many of the rest consistinge of browne-bills and longe-bowes, and by commandement from the Lords of the Councell converted either [*i.e.* both of them] into more chargable and servicable armes is the cause that the totall could never wel be filled, as alsoe that, in our letters heretofore to the Lords of the Councell, wee have humblie prayed for an abatement of one thowsand, parcell of the said 4,000.'

Somewhat later the Privy Council compelled the adoption of one type of fire-arm. In 1618 the Lord Lieutenant was directed to 'be very carefull to see [that] the armes of those forces be *good and servicable*, which wee understand for the foote to bee musketts, and pikes, compleate and fullie furnished. For, although many calivers are in diverse counties inrolled amongst the shott, yet your Lordship well knoweth that the moderne use doth altogether exclude the caliver as unservicable, and not to bee allowed uppon anie musters of armes. And therefore we doe hereby require your Lordship to change all such calivers as are amongst your bands of that county into musketts, with as much conveniency as you may, for the advantage and behoofe of his majesty's service.' The change, as will be seen, was effected with surprizing rapidity.

The actual strength of the foot-companies, as shown at successive musters, was as follows :—

1608—3,473, *i.e.*, 1,558 pikes, 917 muskets, 998 calivers.
1615—3,681, *i.e.*, 1,598 pikes, 23 bills and halberts, 1,442 muskets, 620 calivers.
1618—3,610, *i.e.*, 1,651 pikes, 10 halberts, 1,859 muskets, 90 calivers.
1619—3,800, *i.e.*, 1,760 pikes, 2,040 muskets.
1620—3,816, *i.e.*, 1,879 pikes, 1,937 muskets.
1623—3,826, *i.e.*, 1,832 pikes, 1,994 muskets.

Special difficulty was experienced in raising the horse. One reason was the impoverishment of the yeoman-class. In 1621, *e.g.*, the Deputy-Lieutenants dwell on 'the generall decay of the yeomandry of this county, amongst whom soe few are found fit to undergoe this charge, in respect of the tymes precedent.' Heavier burdens had, therefore, to be laid on the wealthier land-owners. 'Wee must of necessitie be constreyned to impose the more horses upon the knights and gentlemen of best ranke and worth, who are always furnished for their own imployments with horses that are fit for this use, though (where cause shalbe) we may spare them of some foote armes' by way of compensation. A still more active cause was the growing feeling that such charges were obsolete, unjust, and not really enforcible by law. Time after time the Deputy-Lieutenants send warrants to persons charged with finding horse and arms and rider, and not one in four of these persons pays the slightest heed to the warrant served on them. In October 1615, Sir Francis Barrington, Sir William Maynard, and their brothers in the

Deputy-Lieutenancy, complain to the Lord Lieutenant :—'For the troupes of horses, we have by our diligence found out men of sufficient abilitie to make them full and compleate, and ourselves in persons attended the view at the day appointed, yet can wee receive noe other returne than their either letters of excuse, or of delay, or hopes of discharge, or plaine refusalls. And from some of those of the better sort (though continually charged, without any exception [*i.e.*, reasonable excuse] on their parte) neither service, nor any answere at all. Whether the longe disuse of armes, or the slacke proceedinge against offenders of all kinds, or the [neglect of] secondinge of our travell by superior authority, hath bred the neglect of command, wee leave to your Lordship's honorable consideration. But unless your Lordship doe speedily endevor a redresse herein, our further labores will be fruitless.' In November 1623, they write to the Privy Council :—'Notwithstanding our continuall endevors to make those troopes [of horse] full and compleate (for which purpose ourselves have attended personally at everie muster) the neglect of that service is of late growne so frequent and generall, as that we are discouraged therein, finding our labours to be altogether fruitlesse, and, unless your Lordships be pleased to take some speedie course for redresse herein, wee feare the service will in short tyme be wholy contemned.'

The horse was divided into two sorts, heavy and light.

There was one troop of heavy horse of the nominal strength of 50, but it always fell far short of that number. This was regarded as the costliest of military burdens, and therefore to 'be raised amongst the most able knights and gentlemen and others of best habilitie within' the county. The captaincy was regarded as 'the principall command of the horse of this county.'

The county was also to supply 200 light horse. In 1608 these were all in one troop, under command of Sir William Smyth. In July of that year the Lord Lieutenant decided that it was 'verie inconvenient' that so large a force should be 'under the charge of any one captaine,' and directed a division into two troops, one to be raised in the northern hundreds of the shire (Hinckford, Tendring, Lexden, Winstree, Thurstable, Witham, Dunmow, Uttlesford, Freshwell, Clavering, and the borough of Colchester), the other by the southern hundreds (Barstable, Chafford, Becontree with Havering liberty, Chelms-

ford, Rochford, Dengie, Ongar, Harlow, Waltham, and the borough of Maldon). The greater prestige of a command of horse over one of foot is somewhat neatly shown in 1613. The Lord Lieutenant then referred to the Deputy-Lieutenants a request of 'old Mr. French' to be transferred from the charge of a company of foot to one of horse. Their answer was :—'As for Mr. French, a gentleman whom we love and very much affect, desiringe to be captaine of a hundred light horses, besides that wee not then know whom to name in that division to take his present charge, we doe conceive that it beinge the greatest command in all the county, it is fittest for the best knight and justice of peace in the same.'

The horse-troops were generally mustered on one day, and at Chelmsford. This was partly done to prevent a horse and arms and rider being sent to the muster of one company in one man's name, and then to the muster of another company in another man's name. Special instructions were given to the captains of horse to make a note of the height, colour, etc., of horses presented at their musters, with a view to checking this evasion of the service. So prevalent was the practice that a suggestion was made that neighbouring shires should muster their horse-troops on one and the same day to prevent this particular deception on a wider scale.

The returns as to the horse are less complete than those as to the foot. Instead of the nominal 250 the horse mustered in 1615, 155; in 1619, 200; in 1620, 172. In 1617 the number actually present was 83, and, to save their face, the Deputy-Lieutenants were fain to count in 39 persons who had promised, but came not, making a fictitious muster of 122.

After the question of the strength of the rank and file, our enquiry naturally turns to the question of how they were officered. These letters of the Deputy-Lieutenants have a good deal to say about three sets of officers, the Lord Lieutenant, the captains, and the muster-master. The Lord Lieutenant as the King's 'lieutenant-general' in the county was ex-officio in command of the whole Territorial Force of the county, a sort of lieutenant-general of a small division, both in the county and elsewhere, since his lieutenancy gave him authority 'to drawe all the power of this county into other partes of this kingdome.' Of the Lord Lieutenant's interest in the Territorial Forces, in

regard to musters, both in respect of letters of inquiry and by personal presence on review-days, there is no question; as to the technical skill of this earl of Sussex, or any other Lord Lieutenant so appointed, to lead this force in battle or campaign, that question lies outside the province of these notes.

The efficiency of the Territorial Force depended mainly on the captains of companies, and this is abundantly recognised in contemporary documents. The recognised qualifications for a captain were that he should be (a) a man of adequate means, and (b) resident in the district from which the company was drawn. The Lord Lieutenant's perpetual injunction to his deputies is:—'If in your generall survey you doe finde any want of captaines, that you doe nominate and appointe some other sufficient gentlemen nere dwellinge in the same hundred to take upon them the same captainship soe voyde.' There is never any allusion to previous military training in the person pitched upon for command, but it may be assumed that the officers selected had formerly served as lieutenants or cornets under older relatives who had formerly been captains. Nominally the appointment of captain rested solely in the Lord Lieutenant, and there are occasions in which he exercised his right without consulting his deputies. In practice, he seems generally to have referred the vacancy to his deputies, to be filled up in the light of their superior local knowledge. The case of 'old Mr. French,' already cited, is a case of their setting aside a recommendation made by their chief. Accordingly, when the Deputies grumble at the inferiority in social standing and consequent inability of the modern captains to attract recruits, the Lord Lieutenant had his answer ready to hand—the appointments were really their own. Sir Francis Barrington and Sir Gamaliel Capell to the Lord Lieutenant, 18 January, 1613, 'Wee doe let your Lordship understand that the captaines of the severall foote-bands, where such defects of armes have beene certified unto you by the muster-master, are noe doubt much to blame for sufferinge such wants and decrease in the same. For certainely the upholdinge and perfectinge of the companies in soe good strengh and number as is required must be the continuall worke, effect, and industrie of every particular captain who both best know the sufficientest men to be charged in ther severall lymitts, and in respect of their neighbourhoode

and authoritie in those places, may more easilie gaine, persuade, and require them therunto. And herewithall wee thinke it some parte of our office and duty to lett your lordship understand that these kinde of complaints were never heard of in former tymes, when the most worthy and principall gentlemen of this county were only selected to undergoe these services who, out of their owne power and grate care to preferr theire reputations, did not only provide to have their numbers allwayes compleate, but even full with the most substantiall freeholders of every hundred.' Lord Lieutenant to Barrington and Capell, 2 February 1613:—'You seeme to dislike the sufficiency and worth of the captains that are selected to undergoe those services. I am to answere thus much for myselfe, that I have often referred the nomination of the captains to you, and those which now have the charge were rather selected by you than by me.'

The muster-master was an expert assessor to assist the Lord Lieutenant in keeping the muster-roll of the troops, and in supervising the drills. His duty was to be present at the formal muster of every company or group of companies, to bring his copy of the muster-roll up to date, to report on the serviceableness of the weapons then shewed, and to give instruction in manual and manœuvres. He was paid by a fee of sixpence per man, sent by the finder of the arms, and paid on the muster day. There was great reluctance to pay this fee, and he had recourse to the expedient of making the Lord Lieutenant add a postscript to every letter about musters—'remember the muster-master.' *E.g.*, Lord Lieutenant to his Deputies, commanding a muster for 1615:—'Acording to former custom, require each captain by your letters to make collection of £5 in their severall divisions for the Muster-master's intertainment, and to pay it to him at the day of the view, that he may be encouraged in disciplyinge and martiallinge the unskillful souldiours.' The muster-master in 1608 was Capt. Benjamin Hughes; in 1613, Mr. William Grehams; in 1623, a new man, unnamed; in 1627, Ralph Eltonhead.

Little is said in the letters about the training of the forces. It may be assumed that the captains exercised their men privately, so that they might make a creditable appearance on the official review-day, the 'muster' for the year. There was a distinct conflict of opinion between the Deputy-Lieutenants,

representing the ratepayers, and the Lord Lieutenant, representing the War Office, as to the annual musters. The Deputy Lieutenants wished each company to muster by itself at its own centre, so that the men should not have far to go and the finders of arms have to provide only one day's pay. The Lord Lieutenant wished some four or five companies to muster together, partly to conclude the muster within shorter time (in 4 days instead of 19), partly for practice in acting together in larger bodies. In 1613, he writes :—' In my opinion I thinke it very expedient to take the view of them at 4 severall dayes in fower places as conveniently as may be for the companies, or else to reduce them into regiments as formerly they have been, and the most sufficient and principall gentlemen of the shire to take the charge of them.' A stronger reason in favour of the larger musters was that it checked the underhand procedure of showing pike, or musket, first at one centre and, on a later day, at another. Lord Lieutenant, 1621 :—' I thinke it very fitt and expedient that the dayes and places for the musters be soe appointed that the country borrow not armes one of the other, which is a common and ordinarie course, whereby his Majesty's service is much hindered and the state exceedingly abused.' Lord Lieutenant, 1623 :—' Command the captains to put their marks upon their armes that they may know the one from the other.' In 1623 the Privy Council complained that the system of drill was obsolete :—' His Majestye in his princely wisdome observeth that the manninge and trayninge, and arminge heitherto generally used in his kingdome, is not soe exact and servicable as the course held both by all strangers, and by his owne subjects beinge in forraigne employment.' A new drill book was, therefore, sent to every captain of horse or foot, ' intituled *Instructions for Musters and Armes and the use thereof*,' for their ' better direction in the manninge, arminge, furnishinge and exercisinge ' of their troops.

A good deal is said incidentally about the equipment of the trained bands, but the substance of it may be compressed into small space. The uniform was a coat, then provided at the cost of 12s. each, but this was not required except when the soldiers were called out for actual service. For distinction of companies on the muster-days, ribbons of different colours, worn in the hat, were judged sufficient.

The pikeman was required to have a 'pike made of very good seasoned clift ash, of the length of 18 foote at the least, the diameter, about the middest thereof, no less than one inch and three quarters; the head to be well steeled, eight inches in length, made broade and sworde-pointed, the cheekes not to be under two feet in length well-rivited; and the butt-end of the pike to be well bounde with a ringe of iron.' His defensive armour was to be 'a corslett, consisting of a good brest-plate and back-peece, and a gorget, of iron, with taces and strong buckles to fasten the taces unto the skirt; a good murrion or head piece.' He was also to have 'a good stronge and servicable sworde, the blade thereof not above 3 feet in length, in a good scabert with belt and hangers.'

The musket was to have a barrel of 4 feet in length and not over, with a bore 'answerable to the bignes of a round leaden bullett of eleven to the pound.' For the musket, he had a rest of 4½ feet in length. His bandolier was to have 15 'charges' (or powder-receptacles) of wood covered with leather. He carried also a primer, worm and scourer, a bullet-bag, and a mould 'to cast such bulletts as aforesayd.' For close fight he had a sword, 3ft. in length. His sole defensive armour was a head-piece.

The caliver had a barrel 3½ feet long, with a bore 'answerable in widenes to the bignes of a round leaden bullett of seventeene to the pound.' The bearer had no rest, as the caliver was fired pistol-wise or from the shoulder. His other equipment was that of a musketeer.

The heavy horseman, called 'a lanceire or cuirassere' was to have a trotting horse up to his weight, 'with buffe saddle, bridle, bitt, petternell and crooper,' to be protected by a head-piece or burganett with close cheeks, gorget, pistol-proof back-piece and breast-piece of iron, with powldrons, vambraces, cuishes, and tasses, and strong buckles to fasten them; a left-hand gauntlet and cullet [*i.e.*, plate covering lower part of the back]. For close fight he was to have a short sword, and a case of French pistols of 22 inches long, with a good flask and a touch box. Oddly enough nothing is said about the lance.

The light horseman was to have a trotting horse, with buff saddle, bridle, bit, petternell, and crooper; a good head-piece, good curatts (*i.e.*, cuirass, or back and breast pieces), horseman's

staff, a French pistol 22 inches long, and a short sword. In 1625 the horseman's staff was replaced by 'a sufficient harquebus or petronell,' with fire-lock, with barrel three feet long, and carrying a bullet of 20 to the pound.

For practice on the muster-day the finder of arms was required to provide powder, with match and bullet proportionable, as ordered on each occasion. In reserve against invasion the county was required to have 'a certain quantity of powder kept as a store, with match and bulletts, with other provision for carriages to be kept in readiness upon all occasions.' These munitions were to be 'kept in the shire towne, or such toun as you shall thinke meetest for the safe keepinge of itt, and not in any such place as may be easilie subject to dainger of surprize of any evill-disposed persons.' The ordinary arsenals in Essex were the Moot-hall at Colchester, the Vestry at Chelmsford, and a private house at Brentwood; a last [=24 barrels each containing a cwt.] of powder in the first magazine, half-a-last in the other two. From time to time also there were munitions stored in the Moot-hall at Maldon, and in the Church at Harwich. In connection with this county arsenal there are two quaint incidents recorded. In 1613 the Lord-Lieutenant was urged by 'my lord of Worcester' to patronise one Jefferies, dwelling at Creete Church within Algate, 'by giving him the county order for powder,' and expressed his desire to that effect to his Deputies. They made prompt reply:—'As for the price of powder which Jefferies demandeth, viz., 12*d*. the pound, we suppose that price to be excessive and unreasonable (consideringe the quantitie we are to buy) as that we shall deserve very ill of our country if we did not procure the same at a lower rate. And even soe wee intend and thinke good to doe, if his price be not more easie and indifferent.'

In March 1619, £100 was levied on the county to replenish the magazine, Witham hundred being rated at £5, Chelmsford hundred at £9. In May 1619, £66 of this sum was handed to Sir John Sammes, one of the Deputy-Lieutenants, to purchase powder, match, and bullets. Part of his purchase, viz., 8 barrels of match, weighing in all 8½ cwt., and 7 firkins each containing 1 cwt. of musket bullets, he ordered to be taken from London by water to Maldon, and thence to Chelmsford. Finding that these cases had not been delivered there, he went to Colchester in

January 1620, and found them in the moot-hall there. He left orders that on receipt of a letter from him they should be sent to Chelmsford. No letter came, and the cases remained at Colchester, till, on an order made by new Deputy-Lieutenants, they were delivered to Charles Bigland at Chelmsford in April 1624. The carriage from Colchester to Chelmsford cost 23s. 3d.

The history of the separate companies may now be given. It is to be noted that in some cases the figures do not add up properly; they are wrong in the MS., which, of course, has had to be followed. In 1619 in several cases it would seem that the figures for pikes and muskets have been transposed, but there is no way of checking the statement of the MS.

I. Uttlesford hundred, 25 parishes and 2 hamlets, perhaps including Clavering half-hundred, 6 parishes and 2 hamlets.

Captains:—1608, James Reynolds; 1615, Henry Mordant.

Muster-places:—1 March 1613, Saffron Walden; 11 Oct. 1614, Braintree; 4 Sept. 1615, 29 June 1618, Saffron Walden; 30 March 1619, Braintree; 15 July 1622, Thaxstead; 21 June 1624, Saffron Walden.

Strength:—1608, 186, *i.e.* 83 pikes, 54 muskets, 40 calivers.
1613, 200, *i.e.* 84 pikes, 91 muskets, 26 calivers.
1615, 200, *i.e.* 95 pikes, 60 muskets, 45 calivers.
1619, 200, *i.e.* 83 pikes, 117 muskets.
1620 and 1623, 200, *i.e.* 84 pikes, 116 muskets.

II., III., IV. Hinckford hundred, 44 parishes, 2 hamlets; including perhaps Freshwell hundred, 10 parishes.

II. Hinckford A Company.

Captains:—1608, Joshua Barners; 1620, Thomas Cooke.

Muster-places:—2 March 1613, Thaxsted; 11 Oct. 1614, Braintree; 5 Sept. 1615, 27 Sept. 1618, Thaxsted; 30 March 1619, Braintree; 15 July 1622, Thaxsted; 21 June 1624, Saffron Walden.

Strength:—1608, 176, *i.e.* 84 pikes, 55 muskets, 37 calivers.
1613, 206, *i.e.*, 72 pikes, 83 muskets, 70 calivers.
1615, 179, *i.e.* 107 pikes, 57 muskets, 15 calivers.
1619, 200, *i.e.* 96 pikes, 104 muskets.
1621, 194, *i.e.* 90 pikes, 104 muskets.
1623, 200, *i.e.* 90 pikes, 110 muskets.

III. Hinckford B Company.

Captains:—1608, Thomas Waldgrave; 1611, Thomas Perrient (?); 1613, Thomas French; 1614, Sir Thomas Eden; 1618, John Sparrow.

Muster-places:—5 March 1613, 11 Oct. 1614, Braintree; 8 Sept. 1615, Halstead; 24 June 1618, Castle Hedingham; 30 March 1619, 16 July 1622, 22 June 1624, Braintree.

Strength:—1608, 185, *i.e.* 91 pikes, 50 muskets, 54 calivers.
1613, 200, *i.e.* 98 pikes, 57 muskets, 45 calivers.

1615, 200, *i.e.* 83 pikes, 117 muskets.
1619, 1620, 1623, 200, *i.e.* 100 pikes, 100 muskets.

IV. Hinckford C Company.

Captains:—1608, Sir Thomas Gardiner; 1619, Thomas Wiseman of Northend.

Muster-places:—4 March 1613, 11 Oct. 1614, 7 Sept. 1615, 25 June 1618, 30 March 1619, 16 July 1622, 22 June 1624—all at Braintree.

Strength:—1608, 199, *i.e.* 88 pikes, 49 muskets, 62 calivers.
1613, 200, *i.e.* 87 pikes, 50 muskets, 70 calivers.
1615, 200, *i.e.* 95 pikes, 73 muskets, 32 calivers.
1619, 200, *i.e.* 106 pikes, 94 muskets.
1620, 1623, 200, i.e. 94 pikes, 106 muskets.

V.—Dunmow hundred, 25 parishes, 3 hamlets.

Captains:—1608, Thomas Wiseman, esq.; 1615, Robert Wiseman of Canfield.

Muster-places:—3 March 1613, Dunmow; 11 Oct. 1614, Braintree 6 Sept. 1615, 25 June 1618, Dunmow; 30 March 1619, Braintree; 15 July 1622, Thaxted; 22 June 1624, Braintree.

Strength:—1608, 189, *i.e.* 88 pikes, 44 muskets, 55 calivers.
1613, 1615, 200, *i.e.* 80 pikes, 50 muskets, 70 calivers.
1619, 200, *i.e.* 80 pikes, 120 muskets.
1620, 1623, 200, *i.e.* 120 pikes, 80 muskets.

VI.—Lexden hundred, 29 parishes.

Captains:—1608, Sir Thomas Beckingham; 1613, John Argoll; 1622, John Littlebury.

Muster-places:—9 March 1613, Coxall (? Coggeshall); 12 Oct. 1614, 12 Sept 1615, 20 June 1618, 31 March 1619, 17 July 1622, 23 June 1624—all at Colchester.

Strength:—1608, 186, *i.e.* 87 pikes, 50 muskets, 49 calivers. See note *infra*.
1613, 275, *i.e.* 100 pikes, 92 muskets, 83 calivers.
1615, 280, *i.e.* 119 pikes, 94 muskets, 76 calivers.
1619, 300, *i.e.* 154 pikes, 146 muskets.
1620, 1623, 300, *i.e.* 146 pikes, 154 muskets.

Note.—In 1608 companies VI. and VII. were of 200 only; there then being an additional company nominally drawing 100 from each hundred.

Captain:—1608, Mr. Camock, succeeded by John Argoll.

Strength:—1608, 164, *i.e.* 69 pikes, 26 muskets, 69 calivers.

In 1613 this company is suppressed and its men equally divided between companies VI. and VII.

VII. Tendring hundred, 34 parishes.

Captains:—1608, Edward Waldgrave; 1611, Sir Harbottle Grimston 1619, Roger Manwood; 1622, William Lynn.

Muster-places:—6 March 1613, Manningtree; 12 Oct. 1614, Colchester; 9 Sept. 1615, 23 June 1615, Manningtree; 31 March 1619, 17 July 1622, 23 June 1624, Colchester. In 1620 Braintree was appointed for the muster of this company,

and a note is made :—'Harwich and Dovercourt stand charged with 36 men, part of this band, who refuse to send them forth of that corporation to be mustered.'

Strength :—1608, 164, *i.e.* 69 pikes, 26 muskets, 69 calivers. See note *supra*.
1613, 294, *i.e.* 104 pikes, 89 muskets, 100 calivers, 1 halbert.
1615, 260, *i.e.* 89 pikes, 85 muskets, 86 calivers.
1619, 275, *i e.* 105 pikes, 170 muskets.
1620, 265, *i.e.* 97 pikes, 168 muskets.
1623, 264, *i.e.* 98 pikes, 166 muskets.

VIII. Colchester company.

Captains :—1608, Sir George Sayer ; 1615, John Sayer ; 1621, Thomas Higham ; 1625, John Norton.

Muster-places :—Colchester, on all recorded occasions. In 1620 this company was ordered to be mustered at Braintree on Oct. 3, but 'Mr. John Sayer certifieth that the inhabitants of Colchester, where his band is raised, refused to be drawne out of that corporation to be mustered att any other place.'

Strength :—1608, 194, *i.e.* 84 pikes, 42 muskets, 68 calivers.
1613, 200, *i.e.* 82 pikes, 57 muskets, 53 calivers, 8 halberts.
1615, 200, *i.e.* 81 pikes, 64 muskets, 43 calivers, 12 halberts.
1619, 200, *i.e.* 94 pikes, 106 muskets.
1620, 200, *i.e.* 106 pikes, 94 muskets.
1623, 200, *i.e.* 92 pikes, 108 muskets.

IX. Thurstable half-hundred, 10 parishes.

Captains :—1608, William Wrothe ; 1615, Sir Garrett Sammes ; 1622, John Freshwater of Heybridge.

Muster-places :—10 March 1613, Kelvedon ; 12 Oct. 1614, Colchester ; 13 Sept. 1615, Paternoster heath ; 18 June 1618, Toulston (? Tolleshunt) plain ; 31 March 1619, 22 July 1622, 23 June 1624, Colchester.

Strength :—1608, 156, *i.e.* 66 pikes, 44 muskets, 46 calivers.
1613, 174, *i.e.* 72 pikes, 40 muskets, 53 calivers, 9 halberts.
1615, 157, *i.e* 73 pikes, 41 muskets, 36 calivers, 7 bills.
1619, 170, *i.e.* 80 pikes, 90 muskets.
1620, 1622, 170, *i.e.* 90 pikes, 80 muskets.

X. Witham half-hundred, 15 parishes, 1 hamlet.

Captains :—1608, Sir Thomas Wiseman, knight (senior) ; 1622, Sir Thomas Wiseman, knight (junior) ; 1624, Richard Everard.

Muster-places :—11 March 1613, Maldon ; 11 Oct. 1614, Chelmsford ; 14 Sept. 1615, Witham ; 18 June 1618, Boreham ; 1 Apr. 1619, Chelmsford ; 16 July, 1622, 22 June 1624, Braintree.

Strength :—1608, 168, *i.e.* 84 pikes, 46 muskets, 38 calivers.
1613, 182, *i.e.* 69 pikes, 63 muskets, 49 calivers.

1615, 200, *i.e.* 78 pikes, 84 muskets, 38 calivers.
1619, 200, *i.e.* 104 pikes, 96 muskets.
1620, 1623, 200, *i.e.* 96 muskets, 104 pikes.

XI. Chelmsford hundred, 30 parishes, 1 hamlet.
Captains:—1608, Sir William Herris; 1620, Sir Henry Mildmay.
Muster-place:—Chelmsford on all recorded occasions.
Strength:—1608, 184, *i.e.* 87 pikes, 48 muskets, 49 calivers.
1613, 190, *i.e.* 92 pikes, 59 muskets, 39 calivers.
1615, 192, *i.e.* 76 pikes, 75 muskets, 41 calivers.
1619, 200, *i.e.* 105 pikes, 95 muskets.
1620, 1623, 200, *i.e.* 100 pikes, 100 muskets.

XII. Maldon (? and Winstree half hundred, 10 parishes).
Captains:—1608, Sir William Ayloffe; 1613, Sir Edward Bullock; 1618, William Mildmay.
Muster-places:—13 March 1613, Maldon; 11 Oct. 1614, Chelmsford; 16 Sept. 1615, 16 June 1618, Maldon; 1 April 1619, 18 July 1622, 24 June 1624, Chelmsford.
Strength:—1608, 188, *i.e.* 86 pikes, 64 muskets, 38 calivers.
1613, 178, *i.e.* 78 pikes, 66 muskets, 34 calivers.
1615, 173, *i.e.* 76 pikes, 65 muskets, 32 calivers.
1619, 1620, 1623, 200, *i.e.* 100 pikes, 100 muskets.

XIII. Dengie hundred, 20 parishes, 2 hamlets.
Captains:—1608, Sir Francis Herris; 1612, Robert Wiseman of Mayland; 1622, Giles Browne.
Muster-places:—12 March 1613, Maldon; 11 Oct. 1614, Chelmsford; 18 Sept. 1615, 16 June 1618, Althorne; 1 Apr. 1619, 18 July 1622, 24 June 1624, Chelmsford.
Strength:—1608, 128, *i.e.* 50 pikes, 30 muskets, 46 calivers.
1613, 175, *i.e.* 67 pikes, 59 muskets, 49 calivers.
1615, 159, *i.e.* 77 pikes, 64 muskets, 18 calivers.
1619, 190, *i.e.* 97 pikes, 93 muskets.
1620, 1623, 176, *i.e.* 86 pikes, 90 muskets.

XIV. Rochford hundred, 24 parishes, 2 hamlets,
Captains:—1608, Sir James Bouchier (or Butcher); 1622, Edmund Humfrey.
Muster-places:—15 March 1613, Rochford; 11 Oct. 1614, Chelmsford; 19 Sept. 1615, 13 June 1618, Rochford; 1 April 1619, 18 July 1622, 24 June 1624, Chelmsford.
Strength:—1608, 184, *i.e.* 80 pikes, 89 muskets, 35 calivers.
1613, 200, *i.e.* 100 pikes, 70 muskets, 30 calivers.
1615, 177, *i.e.* 86 pikes, 80 muskets, 11 calivers.
1619, 175, *i.e.* 85 pikes, 90 muskets.
1620, 175, *i.e.* 90 pikes, 85 muskets.
1623, 174, *i.e.* 90 pikes, 84 muskets.

XV. Barstable hundred, 34 parishes.
Captains:—1608, John Harlstone; 1615, Sir Thomas Gourney; 1620, Sir William Fitch (or Finch); 1622, Sir Richard Saltonstall.
Muster-places:—16 March 1613, Billericay; 12 Oct. 1614, Brentwood;

20 Sept. 1615, 12 June 1618, Billericay; 2 April 1619, 19 July 1622, 25 June 1624, Brentwood.

Strength :—1608, 139, *i.e.* 66 pikes, 40 muskets, 33 calivers
1613, 184, *i.e*, 83 pikes, 69 muskets, 32 calivers.
1615, 171, *i.e.* 87 pikes, 84 muskets.
1619, 160, *i.e.* 82 pikes, 78 muskets.
2620, 1623, 176, *i.e.* 90 pikes, 86 muskets.

XVI.—Chafford hundred, 16 parishes.

Captains :—1608, Sir Richard Saltonstall; 1619, Sir William Fitch (or Finch); 1620, Sir Thomas Gourney.

Muster-place :—Brentwood, on all occasions recorded.

Strength:—1608, 149, *i.e.* 78 pikes, 30 muskets, 41 calivers.
1613, 177, *i e.* 68 pikes, 65 muskets, 36 calivers, 8 halberts.
1615, 200, *i.e.* 86 pikes, 74 muskets, 36 calivers, 4 halberts.
1619, 149, *i.e.* 59 pikes, 78 muskets.
1620, 160, *i.e.* 78 pikes, 82 muskets.
1623, 166, *i.e.* 76 pikes, 90 muskets.

XVII. Beacontree hundred, 9 parishes, 6 hamlets, with Havering liberty, 1 parish, 7 hamlets.

Captains ;—1608, Sir Nicholas Coote.

Muster-places :—18 March 1613, Romford ; 12 Oct. 1614, Brentwood ; 22 Sept. 1615, 10 June 1618, Romford; 2 Apr. 1619, 19 July 1622, 25 June 1624, Brentwood.

Strength :—1608, 182, *i.e.* 86 pikes, 44 muskets, 52 calivers.
1613, 200, *i.e.* 73 pikes, 95 muskets, 30 calivers.
1615, 189, *i.e.* 83 pikes, 106 muskets.
1619, 200, *i.e.* 95 pikes, 105 muskets.
1620, 200, *i.e.* 112 pikes, 88 muskets.
1623, 200, *i.e.* 110 pikes, 90 muskets.

XVIII. Harlow half-hundred, 10 parishes, 3 hamlets, with Waltham half-hundred, 4 parishes, 3 hamlets.

Captains :—1608, Sir Reginald (or Richard) Argoll ; 1613, Sir Henry Lee ; Sir Edward Altham ; 1620, Robert Leigh of Chingford ; 1622, Richard Bugges.

Muster-places :—19 March 1613, Epping ; 12 Oct. 1614, Brentwood ; 27 Sept. 1615, 9 June 1618, Epping; 2 Apr. 1619, Brentwood ; 20 July 1622, Ongar ; 25 June 1624, Brentwood.

Strength :—1608, 163, *i.e.* 58 pikes, 55 muskets, 50 calivers.
1613, 200, *i.e.*, 64 pikes, 82 muskets, 54 calivers.
1615, 184, *i.e.* 65 pikes, 119 muskets.
1619, 190, *i.e.*, 65 pikes, 125 muskets.
1620, 1623, 200, *i.e.* 100 pikes, 100 muskets.

XIX. Ongar hundred, 26 parishes, 1 hamlet.

Captains :—1608, Clement Stonar ; 1613, Edward Elrington; 1615, Henry Archer of Theydon Garnon ; 1615, Sir Gamaliel Capell ; 1618, Francis Stonar.

Muster-places :—20 March 1613, Ongar; 12 Oct. 1614, Brentwood ; 28 Sept. 1615, 8 June 1618, 2 Apr. 1619, 20 July 1622, Ongar ; 25 June 1624, Brentwood.

Strength:—1608, 154, *i.e.* 61 pikes, 39 muskets, 54 calivers.
1613, 163, *i.e.* 59 pikes, 52 muskets, 52 calivers.
1615, 160, *i.e.* 60 pikes, 50 muskets, 50 calivers.
1619, 160, 623, 200, *i.e.* 70 pikes, 103 muskets.

1 Heavy Horse: 50 on paper.
Captains:—1605, Sir Edward Huddlestone; refused in 1608 by Sir William Smith and Thomas Lucas; 1611, Sir Henry Mildmay of Waltham; 1620, Sir Henry Appleton, Bart.; 1625, Sir Henry Mildmay of Grace's; 1628, John Lucas.
Muster-place:—Chelmsford, on all occasions.
Strength:—1615, 32; 1617, 16 with 9 additional promises; 1619, 46; 1620, 40; 1628, 66.

2. Northern Hundreds Light Horse: 100 on paper.
Captains:—1611, Sir Gowen Harvey; 1911, refused by Sir Thomas Bendish; 1612, refused by Thomas Lucas; 1613, Sir Henry Mildmay of Grace's; 1624, Sir John Meade; 1628, Thomas Bendish.
Muster-place:—Chelmsford, usually; 30 March 1619, Braintree.
Strength:—1615, 63; 1617, 37 with 16 promises; 1619, 77; 1620, 63; 1623, 60; 1628, 97.

3. Southern Hundreds Light Horse: 100 on paper.
Captains:—1611, Sir Thomas Eliott; 1619, Sir Gowen Harvie; 1628, Peter Latham.
Muster-place:—Chelmsford, usually; 2 April 1619, Brentwood.
Strength:—1615, 60; 1617, 30 with 14 promises; 1619, 77; 1620, 69 1623, 65; 1628, 107.

MET. BOROUGH OF POPLAR PUBLIC LIBRARIES

DEATH OF MR. THOMAS THOMPSON, OF CHELMSFORD.

The death occurred at Chelmsford on Sunday, March 8, of Mr. Thomas Thompson, editor and part-proprietor of the 'Essex County Chronicle,' and associated papers. Mr. Thompson was one of the best known journalists in the county, and up to a few months before his death was still pursuing a busy and energetic life. He was a native of Rochdale, Lancashire, where he was born in December 1848, being therefore at the time of his death in his 60th year. His earlier journalistic life was spent at Rochdale and Grantham, but 40 years ago he joined the staff of the 'Essex County Chronicle,' and eight years later, on the death of one of the proprietors, he became editor. In 1885 he became a partner with Mr. Frederick Meggy, and on the latter's death in 1896 he remained the sole acting partner until 1899, when the new firm was formed under the title of Meggy, Thompson and Co.

In his long career Mr. Thompson naturally saw many changes in the world of journalism, and to the time of his death he cherished an ill-concealed contempt for the new 'yellow' press. He was also an ardent advocate for an alteration of the law of libel, and on one occasion helped to draft a Bill on the subject, which, however, was blocked in the House of Commons. Mr. Thompson, who was a Fellow of the Institute of Journalists, was greatly interested in literature outside the bounds of his own business, and belonged to the Modern Languages Association, and also to the Chelmsford 'Odde Volumes.' For some time he was a governor of Chelmsford Grammar School, and took a keen interest in the public life of his adopted town. His last speech was made at the Shire Hall, in advocacy of the claims of Chelmsford to be the Essex Cathedral City. He was also a prominent supporter of County Athletic Institutions. Mr. Thompson, who was twice married, leaves two children—Alderman John Ockleford Thompson, a member of the firm, and Mrs. John Shannon, also of Chelmsford.

Mrs. W. J. Gallagher, better known to Essex readers as Alice E. Argente, died, after a long illness, at Chelmsford on 16 March. Born at Boreham, and for some time resident at Danbury, Miss Argente early began contributing articles and verses to 'Great Thoughts' and other journals. She published a volume or two of prose and verse, and was a graceful writer.

New Justices of the Peace for Essex.—The following 26 gentlemen qualified at the March Quarter Session :—

E. B. Barnard, M.P., Fair Green House, Sawbridgeworth.
G. T. Thorpe Bartram, Braintree.
Henry I. Belsham, Lothian House, Braintree.
Walter Butler, Hatfield Peverel.
Arthur Chapman, Abbey Farm, Waltham Abbey.
Eli Cornish, Tortoise House, Sible Hedingham.
John J. Craig, Heath House, Romford.
Samuel William Crawley, Hadstock Hall, Linton.
Pete Francis Curran, M.P., Walthamstow.
Brooklyn Chas. Custerson, Ford End House, Clavering.
Douglas Thos. Franklin, Thaxted.
William Walter Green, Plashet Lands, New Wanstead.
Robert Muirhead Howett, Roden Lodge, Barking.
Henry F. Hills, Chalkney, Earls Colne.
Montagu Edward Hughes-Hughes, Leez Priory, Hartford End.
Philip Hutley, Powers Hall, Witham.
Harold McCorquodale, Forest Hall, Ongar.

William Foot Mitchell, Quendon Hall, Newport.
Thos. Philpot, 78, Richmond Road, Ilford.
George H. Pizey, Casamia, Chingford.
George Cumins Row, Braintree.
Henry Rumsey, Fisherton House, Dunmow.
Robert Stroud, Barley Hall, Ilford.
Thomas P. Trounce, The Bank, Waltham Abbey.
Col. C. Maximilian Western, Goldsmiths, Laindon Hills.
Arthur Chas. Wilkin, Tiptree.

MET. BOROUGH OF POPLAR PUBLIC LIBRARIES

NOTES AND QUERIES.

The Ruck Family of Maldon.—John Ruck, a younger son of Thomas Ruck (*E.R.*, vol. xvi., p. 98), was living at Salem, Massachusetts in 1646. Savage refers to him as 'born in England about 1627 ; made a freeman of Massachusetts, Plymouth Colony, in 1640 ; kept a tavern in Salem, 1663 ; was select man of that town in 1686 ; and represented it in the General Court from 1685 to 1689.' He is supposed to be referred to in the will (dated 28 May and proved 10 July, 1646) of Humphrey Howland of St. Swithin's, London, draper and clothworker :—'Item, I give unto my brother, Arthur Howland, 8*li.* out of the debt owing to me by Mr. Ruck, of New England, and to my brother, John Howland, 4*li.* out of the same debt, and to my brother, Henry Howland, 4*li.* out of the same debt.' From information supplied by Mr. L. M. Howland, who would be glad of any further notice of these Howland brothers.

ANDREW CLARK, Great Leighs.

Bacon and Chelmsford.—It may not be generally known that the great Lord Chancellor Bacon had an interest in an inn at Chelmsford. In 1606 Bacon had married Alice, the second daughter of Benedict Barnham, a wealthy London merchant, who amongst other property owned a 'Messuage and inn, called the Ffawkon in Chelmisforde in the County of Essex.' Barnham, who died in 1598, left no sons, but four daughters, Elizabeth, Alice, Dorothy, and Bridget, who became the wives respectively of—(1) Mervyn, Lord Audley, Earl of Castlehaven, (2) Sir Francis Bacon, (3) Sir John Constable, (4) Sir William Soame. By a document drawn up in 1620 it appears that this messuage and inn had been assigned to Bacon (now Baron of Verulam and Lord Chancellor) and his wife, charged to pay an annual rent of sixteen pounds to Sir John Constable and his wife, and in this deed the four parties agree that in the case of

the inn, on the expiration of the current lease, proving to be worth more than sixteen pounds a year, the overplus is to be equally divided between them; but should the value fall below sixteen pounds a year, the deficiency is to be made good to the Constables by the three other families in equal proportions. This interesting deed of arrangement is duly signed by the eight parties thereto:—'Fr. Verulam Canc,' 'Alice Verulam; 'Castlehaven,' 'Eliza. Castlehaven;' 'Jo. Constable,' 'Dorothy Constable;' 'W. Soame,' 'Bridget Soame.'

J. J. Holdsworth, Stratford.

Rural Amenities.—Will some reader of the *Essex Review* kindly explain what is in the mind of the rustic when, in friendly response to an invitation or some agreeable request, he answers 'I don't mind.' It is quite common hereabouts. Is it local or general?

Two instances will make the question clear. Not long ago, I went to a cottage to ask a wife and her daughters to tea. Only the husband was at home, and he replied, 'I don't suppose they'll mind coming.' The invitation was given quite ordinarily, as one would give it to any of one's friends, and I am sure it was appreciated. Later I happened to want some bearers for a funeral, and asked some men who were specially connected with the family. Two replied, 'I don't mind,' and only when it was pointed out to them that it was not a question of not minding, but whether they would like to do it, did they respond willingly.

It is not lack of manners—manners are not lacking in our best rustics; they are unquestionable. It is not indifference, nor, I think, independence. I suppose it is shyness, reserve, and partly, slow apprehension; but I should like a better opinion.

Quite lately, I have come upon a level lower than 'don't mind.' I asked a man whom I met on the road—he was road-mending—to come to my house to see his sister, who is my housekeeper, to have any refreshment he liked, to walk about my garden, and so on. I thought I had made it quite clear, but he seemed to have some mental difficulty. He ruminated, and then said, 'I allus was friendly with *old* Mr. G——.' 'And,' I said, 'I hope with me, too.' Again he ruminated, then spat on his hands, and finally said, 'I ain't got nothin' agin ye.' As I left, hoping that the idea would in time soak in, I saw a wide grin spreading across his face, and I think it had at last penetrated.

Edward Gepp, High Easter.

MET. BOROUGH OF POPLAR PUBLIC LIBRARIES

REVIEWS OF BOOKS, &c.

Roses, Their History, Development and Cultivation, by the Rev. Joseph H. Pemberton. With coloured frontispiece, nine lithographic plates, and other illustrations in the text. Longmans, Green and Co., 1908. Pp. xxiv., 338, cr. 8vo. Price 10s. 6d.

We predict for this delightful book, on an ever fascinating subject, a long and prosperous reign, worthy of the Queen of Flowers, to whom it is dedicated. The author is well known as a devoted rosarian, a successful grower and exhibitor, and descended from a stock distinguished in the annals of the roses. He inscribes his book to his father, a rose-grower who instructed him, as a youthful aspirant of twelve, in the art of budding, from which time, and even earlier, Mr. Pemberton dates his devotion to the national flower.

His garden of the Round House at Havering, where his father and grandfather lived before him, is one especially adapted to rose cultivation, and round its quaintly piliared verandahs are clusters and bowers of roses. Essex, as he reminds us, is the county of wild roses, especially of the *Rosa rubiginosa* or sweet brier, which the Essex children call by the homely name of 'sweet Maria.' It is appropriate to find that the manor of Pyrgo, in Havering-atte-Bower, was held by Queen Elizabeth, wife of Edward IV., upon the tenure of a white rose, presented to the King every year, in the month of roses, upon the feast of the Nativity of St. John the Baptist. As she was a Lancastrian by birth, this was a graceful sign that she belonged by marriage to her husband's house of York, whose badge was a rose of red.

But from these dainty histories, Mr. Pemberton passes to become eminently practical, and to deal exhaustively with every aspect of his subject. From the botany of the rose he proceeds to British wild roses, to the wild roses of other countries, to summer and autumn flowering roses. He shows us the altered social position of the national flower since it became, about 1840, the perpetual rose. 'The rose of our grandparents was a flower lasting only a few weeks, now it is with us from April to November. Seventy years ago, because the rose was the flower of a season, a month, the month of June, it shared the flower border with the tulip, holly-hock and dahlia.' Nowadays

we all realise that the rose brooks no rival colours in its near neighbourhood, and never looks so well as when grown in masses of its own kindred. The multiplication of Hybrid Perpetuals from 1860 to 1890 was extraordinary, and then followed universal recognition of the Hybrid Teas, which by 1901 numbered sixty-five. This class of rose is now everyone's favourite. Our author says 'there is not a single purpose demanded of the Hybrid Tea rose which it cannot supply. . . . Roses for exhibition, roses for bedding, roses for pillars, for house decoration, for button holes—you will find them all among the Hybrid Teas.' He tells us a charming fairy tale about a little passenger dressed in pink, who came from China to England on a visit in 1810, lived in single blessedness till another Chinese native, dressed in a yellow costume appeared, when she married him and emigrated to France, where a numerous progeny was the result. This marriage of the Blush Tea-scented, and the Yellow Tea-scented, rose was the origin of the great family of tea-scented roses.

More than half of Mr. Pemberton's book is devoted to the cultivation of the rose, planting, manuring, pruning, budding, cutting, grafting, and layering, raising from seed, and growing for exhibition. A final chapter on pests lays all rose-growers under obligation to the author, who follows up his very practical advice as to selection of site, aspect, soil, etc., with giving us remedies for every disease that roses are heir to. We may say with confidence every disease, for of one dire complaint, 'rose tumour,' he says, the only plan is to cut out and burn the stems affected. Mr. Pemberton pays great credit to the rose-growers of Essex and its neighbourhood, among whom Thomas Rivers, Benjamin Cant, and W. Paul were early pioneers. His Appendix of 'selected roses recommended for cultivation' should prove helpful and suggestive to all rose-growers.

The illustrative sketches, in the chapters on budding and pruning, are the work of the author's sister, Miss Florence Pemberton. The plate of *Rosa spinosissima* the parent of the Scotch Briers, from Mr. Andrews' Monograph, is particularly good.

NEW HALL IN THE TIME OF LORD WALTHAM. SOUTH FRONT.

THE

ESSEX REVIEW:

A Quarterly Journal for the County.

No. 67.] JULY, 1908. VOL. XVII.

NEW HALL, BOREHAM.

1553—1799.

BY M. P.

(*Continued from p.* 66.)

MET. BOROUGH OF POPLAR PUBLIC LIBRARIES

IN the reign of Mary Tudor, Sir Thomas Wharton, a former official of her household, obtained a lease of New Hall, in applying for which he incidentally mentioned that the palace was much out of repair. He was son of the first Baron Wharton (created 1545); and married Ann, daugther of Robert Ratcliffe, Earl of Sussex. In the reign of Mary, Sir Thomas was Privy Councillor; he took part in suppressing several rebellions, and was in high favour at court until the accession of Elizabeth, when he was deprived of all his preferments.*

Queen Elizabeth is said to have visited New Hall in the spring of 1559, and to have spent a month here with her favourite, Robert Dudley, and a few attendants. The young Duke of Anjou, who was proposed as a suitable match for Elizabeth, came to England incognito, and was received at New Hall, but nothing came of the visit.

From the State Papers† we gather that Sir Thomas Wharton was the first person prosecuted under Elizabeth for having Mass said in his house. It is clear from the context given below, that it was no longer considered safe for Mass to be celebrated in the chapel. It was said at the opposite side of the house, in or near a room which is now used as an oratory. The priest was concealed in a barn, and was probably led in by what is now a cellar door, and thence up a flight of stairs, the

* For the details of this chapter concerning Sir Thomas Wharton, we are indebted to the kindness of Mr. H. Reade, who has placed the results of his researches in the Record Office at our disposal.

† 'Domestic,' Elizabeth. Vols. xvi., xvii., xviii.

remains of which are still visible. We now give the account of the forcible entry into New Hall of the Earl of Oxford, as Lord Lieutenant of Essex, from the original documents preserved at the Record Office.‡

Edmund Grindall, Bishop of London, to Secretary Cecill.

I send you enclosed the Confession of Coxe alias Devon, the prieste, for Masse Matters taken this present daye after receipte of your letters. Surely for his Magicke and conjurations, your Lordships of the Councill must apoynte some Extraordinarie punishment for the Example. My Lord Chieffe Justice sayth the temporall lawe will not meddle with him and ecclesiasticall punishment is too slender for so grave offences, I thought it my parte to offer it to your consideration and so wish you my goode will and service. 17 Aprilis 1561. Yrs. in Christe

EDM. LONDON.

The Examination of John Devon Clarke taken before John Darell, one of the Queenes Maties Justices of the Peace for the County of Kent, the 17 of Aprill 1561.

First, the sayde John Devon dyd come to Sir Thomas Wharton's house (Knyghte) at New Hall, in Essex, on Candlemas Day last past, and upon Candlemas Day last said, and my Ladye his wyffe with 2 other gentlewomen and also the said John Devon being required to come up to hear masse at a back door by one Jollye, a priest, who said masse in latten in a chambre next to my ladye's chambre, at which masse they did have candles in their handes. And there was also mynystered that daye holly water and holly bread.

Item. Within seavenight next following, upon a Friday, the said Jolly Clarke, 2 gentlewomen aforesaid, and the said John Devon, was at another masse in the sayd chambre said by the said Jolly in latten.

Item. There was in the same chambre, a rood of tymbre and two pictures of Mary and John standing in a window, and a board with certain paynted images upon the altar.*

The Answers of Jno. Coxe alias Devon to sundry questions. 1. He sayth no more the 2 [masses at New Hall]. 2. That Sir Thomas Wharton knew of his voyage over, but noughte of his letters, messages or packages. Some money was given him by my ladye.

Earl of Oxford (Lord Lieutenant of Essex) to the Lords of the Councill.

After most hartie commendations to your good lls. According to your pleasures I have apprehended these and sundry persons for their unlawfull practices to the breache of good order and religion established; the greatest part of whose confessions and examinations I have herewith addressed to your honours; so likewise I have thought mete to advertise your lls. of the conformitie and obstinacie of such of them as this cryme have commytted.

And first upon my comyng to New Hall, enterynge the House and Chargyng my men, some with keepynge the gates and others with backdores and wayes to

‡ *State Papers Domestic.* Elizabeth. Vol. xvi. 1561. (46).

* The remaining part of the Document refers to Masses said by J. Devon in the private chapels of sundry Catholics.

NEW HALL, PRESENT FAÇADE.

th' intent no man might escape, that there should be found within anything unlooked [*sic*], I called Mr. Wharton privately before me with all his men, and committing them by and by to Sordall's custodie, and thereupon broke to Mr. Wharton privatelie part of my commission, as I thought mete to be imparted to him, who then in the most humble manner submitted himself to the grate clemencie of the Queen's majestie and of himself, declarynge unto me how that only concerning the masse he was an offender, but saith he, concernynge my dutye besides, if you shall find any other matter against me, I utterly renounce all mercie and favor . . . and so I took him with me and made seeke in all partes of his house so how as I could for the things your lls privately noted unto me, and find the trumpery in a sceduld shall appear unto you. I could neither in casket, cheste or other place fynde any cause or presumption whereby his fayth and allegeance to the State was any wit impayred, and yet found I a great number of letters in the casket in his own chambre, which although I have not perused yet have I locked and sealed them untill further knowledge of your pleasure. My ladye his wyfe I found very sicke, and I for that cause left her gentlewomen about her, taking recognisaunce of Mr. Wharton in that matter to the Queen's Majestie for their forthcoming when they shall be called.

(Signed) OXYNFORD.

'An Inventorie of all such implements of Superstition as were found in the Chambre next to the Lady Wharton's Bedchambre.

First a roode of tymbre with Mary and John, parcell gilded.

Item. An altartable and paynted image with a certayne prayer *pro salute omnium fidelium defunctor*:

Item. A great plancke instead of an Altar with a super-altar upon the same and III altar clothes to furniscie it.

Item. A crosse with Mary and John, of Copper and gilt, and another crosse Copper beside the same.

Item. A chalice of silver parcel gilt with the pattena.

Item. II littel candlesticks of silver, and a holy watter payle and sprinkler of silver with holy water in the same.

Item. II latten candlesticks with wax candles standing upon the altar with divers latten books as Masse Bookes and others.

Item. Palmstickes, candles of waxe such as are commonly used at Candlemas, ashes and a disciplining rod.

Item. A candlestick of latten to set in the Paschall light.

Item. A standing cup with a cover of silver all gilte instead of a pyx, and therein a littel box of consecrated bread with a canopy cloth of whyte taffeta garnished with a lace of gold and III tassels wrought of silver partly and gold.

Item. A corporal case with a cloth in the same.

Item. A surplice and the vestments to say mass in, with two pieces of frankincense in the same.

Memo. The roods and pictures were left in the House by Queen Mary, and the rest of the premises except the gilt cup and the holy water payle and the littel candlesticks, were brought thither by John [? Devon].

Signed. THOMAS WHARTON.

The name of Lady Ann Wharton appears with that of Sir Thomas among the offenders indicted and convicted at the Commission of Oyer, held at Brentwood, before the Earl of

Oxford, June 3, 1561. Both were committed to the Tower, where Lady Ann soon died. Her body was brought to Boreham for interment, and her name is inscribed in the register, next to that of her daughter Katharine, who had died in the previous year. Sir Thomas was set free on July 16, 1561, paying a fine of 100 marks. The two priests were also imprisoned.

In 1573, Elizabeth granted to Thomas Ratcliffe, Earl of Sussex, the Honour of 'Biewliew,' alias New Hall, probably as a reward for the success of his campaign against the northern insurgents in 1569. This Earl was Lady Ann Wharton's brother; he married first, Elizabeth, daughter of Thomas Wriothesley, Earl of Southampton; secondly, Frances, daughter of Sir William Sidney, of Penshurst, and foundress of Sidney Sussex College, Cambridge. This Earl of Sussex is considered to have built the portion of New Hall that remains, or at least to have changed it considerably. The style of architecture is Elizabethan, and the date 1573 is engraved on the west wing. The existing front was the north side of the great quadrangle and the south side of another quadrangle. The Sussex arms are still to be seen on the ceilings of three rooms in the west wing. Over the door leading to the old Chapel were these arms and quarterings, carved in stone, of Thomas Ratcliffe, Earl of Sussex:—

1. A bend ingrailed for Ratcliff.
2. A fess between two chevrons for Fitzwalter.
3. A lion rampant crowned with a bordure. Burnell.
4. A saltire ingrailed. Botecourt.
5. Three lucies hauriant. Lucy.
6. Three bars. Multon.
7. Semee Fleurs de lis. Mortimer of Attilborough.
8. An eagle and child. Culcheth.

Over the door leading to the hall, which was once an outer door, were the arms and quarterings of Frances Sidney, Countess of Sussex:—

1. A Pheon. Sidney.
2. Two bars, in chief three shields. Clunford.
3. Chevronelles; a label of three points. Barrington.
4. On a bend three lozenges. Mercy.
5. Quarterly an escarbuncle. Mandeville.
6. A chevron between three mullets. Chetwynd.

7. Three lions rampant. Baard.

8. Barry of eight, a lion rampant crowned. Brandon.

Over the doorway of the present chapel are the arms of England in stone, supported by a crowned lion and a dragon, and under them is the following inscription :—

'En terra piu savia Regina. En Cielo la piu lucente Stella:
Vergina Magnanima, Dotta, Divina, Legiadra, Honesta e Bella.'

Until recently the words 'Viva Elizabetha!' stood over the arms, and caryatides were on each side of them.

The porcupine, the original Sidney crest, is still conspicuous in one of the passages, and over the front entrance under the Royal Arms.

Earl Thomas died June 9, 1583, at the age of 57. He had added at his own expense a south aisle to Boreham Church, and called it Sussex Chapel, making it the burial place for his family. An extract from his epitaph will tell his story :—

'He executed two very considerable embassies from Queen Mary to the Emperor Charles V. and the King of Spain, and a third from his royal mistress Elizabeth to the Emperor Maximilian. He was Viceroy in Ireland, and for nine years together suppressed all rebellions there, and prevented Scotland from uniting with them. He was Governor of the English northern province, where he routed the rebels and the Scotch, who encouraged them, laying waste their castles, again taking or destroying numbers. He was most faithful to his mighty sovereign Henry VIII. and his heroic race. He was possessed of an invincible soul, alike brave and fortunate in the field, and in the Cabinet a most prudent Councillor. He was skilled in most languages and was of an uncorrupt life.'

Sir Thomas left no son, and was succeeded by his brother Henry. He and his wife, Honor, were buried at Boreham in 1593. Henry was succeeded by his son Robert, who died in 1629, without issue surviving. The brief records of the three children who predeceased him are thus entered in the register :—

1597. 4 Aug., Thomas, son of Robert, Earl of Sussex, born 15 July afor XI clock.

1598. Lady Honor, da. of Robert, Earl of Sussex, born the 27 Aug. at IV. of the clock in the mornynge, and Bapd. XII. Sep.

BURIALS.

1613. Honoar, da. of Robert, Earl of Sussex.

1619. Thomas, son to Robert, Earl of Sussex.

The eldest son must have been born before his father took possession of New Hall, for there is no mention of his baptism in the register, only the melancholy entry of the burial :—

1620. Henry, eldest son to Robert, Earl of Sussex.

NEW HALL.

FRONT ENTRANCE, SHEWING ROYAL ARMS, INSCRIPTION TO QUEEN ELIZABETH, AND SIDNEY CREST.

In 1622 Earl Robert sold New Hall for £30,000 to George Villiers, Duke of Buckingham. This nobleman lived here in great splendour, often entertaining Prince Charles, eldest surviving son of James I. It is said that they made here their preparations for the famous expedition to Spain, when Buckingham so offended the Spanish Court that the marriage negotiations between Prince Charles and the Infanta were broken off. When Charles afterwards became engaged to Henrietta Maria, daughter of the King of France, Buckingham was deputed to escort the young Princess to England. On Aug. 3, 1628, the Duke was assassinated at Portsmouth by Felton, and New Hall passed to his son, also named George Villiers, who lived here until the Civil War broke out, 1641. Charles I. is known to have visited Chelmsford in 1638, and it is considered likely that he came to New Hall on that occasion, as on the panel preserved at Sheepcote Farm, Little Waltham, which we mentioned in our last chapter, the letters C. R. are painted in gold on a black ground, over the badge of Anne Boleyn. On the lower part of the same is the date 1638—a commemoration probably of a royal visit. The downfall of the unfortunate King proved the ruin of his friends. After the defeat of the Royal Army at Kingston-on-Thames, the Duke of Buckingham was proceeded against as a traitor, and was forced to fly the country. His estate was sold by Commissioners specially appointed to sell traitors' estates, and was purchased by Oliver Cromwell for the paltry sum of five shillings; its computed yearly value being £1,309 12s. 3¾d. Cromwell is said to have sent the five shillings in derision to the exiled Duke. He did not reside much at New Hall. His wife, daughter of Sir James Bourchier, of Felsted, only visited the place once, on April 25, 1652, when Oliver entertained here his brother-in-law Desborough, his son-in-law Fleetwood, his two sons Richard and Henry, his mother and four daughters. On being named Lord-Protector, in 1653, Cromwell exchanged New Hall for Hampton Court, paying the difference. The estate was sold in 1657 for £18,000, to three London Merchants, who retained it until the Restoration. John Evelyn gives the following description of a visit which he paid to New Hall in 1656;—

'I returned homeward, passing through Colchester; and by the way, neere the antient town of Chelmsford, saw New Hall, built in a Parke by Henry VII.

and VIII., and given by Queen Elizabeth to the Earle of Sussex, who sold it to the late great Duke of Buckingham, and since seized on by O. Cromwell (pretended Protector). It is a faire old house built with brick ; low, being only of 2 stories, as the manner then was ; the Gate-house better; the court large and pretty ; the staire-case of extraordinarie widenesse, with a picce representing Sir F. Drake's action in the year 1580. an excellent sea-piece ; the galleries are trifling ; the hall is noble, the garden a faire plot, and the whole seat well accommodated with water ; but above all, I admired the faire avenue planted with stately lime-trees in four rowes, for neere a mile in length. It has three descents, which is the only fault, and may be reform'd. There is another faire walk of the same at the mall and wildernesse, with a tennis-court, and pleasant terrace towards the park, which was well stored with deere and ponds.'

At the Restoration, the Duke of Buckingham recovered New Hall, but soon sold it to George Monck, Duke of Albemarle, who lived here in great luxury on his pension of £7,000 per annum. He gave here a magnificent display of fireworks in honour of the royal marriage between Charles II. and Catherine of Braganza, in 1661. Charles and his Court were frequent visitors to New Hall, the Duke pandering to the vices of the King. Nell Gwyn and other kindred spirits acted 'The Merry Wives of Windsor' in the great hall of the mansion. Anne Duchess of York, the Princess Dowager of Orange, and Cosmo III. of Tuscany were the other royal visitors entertained here by the Duke. He died January 3, 1670, and was buried in Henry VII.'s Chapel, Westminster. Christopher Monck, second Duke of Albemarle, who succeeded his father at New Hall, invited James II. here in May 1686, and the episode is thus chronicled in the *Autobiography* of Sir John Bramston :—

'The Kinge being invited by the Duke of Albemarle to New Hall to hunt some out-lying red deere, his majestie went towards New Hall the 3rd of May, 1686 ; and when he came neere Chelmsforde, hearinge the Duke with the hounds were neere the place where the stagg was harboured, in a wood neere Bicknaker mill, his majestie turned out of the road and went by Moulsham Hall thither. The stagg came out of the wood neere where the Kinge was, and many with him, whoe followed the hounds; but Prince George (who had married the Princess Ann), the Duke of Albemarle, the Earle of Feversham, Lord Dartmouth, and severall others, being on the other side of the wood, heard not the hounds, nor knew not that the stagg had left the wood untill late, and so severall cast out, and never reacht the hounds. The stagg made toward the forest, and gott thither and rann almost as far as Wanstead, where, turning head, he was at last killed between Romford and Brentwood, or neerer Romford. The Kinge was neere at the death ; he gott a coach to carrie him to Brentwood (where his own coach was), and well pleased that he was in, the Lords thrown out.'

The following year the Duke of Albemarle was made Governor General of Jamaica, where he died in 1688.

TIME OF LORD WALTHAM (1762).

New Hall was settled on his wife Elizabeth, eldest daughter of Henry Cavendish, Earl of Ogle, afterwards second Duke of Newcastle. She married again in 1691, Ralph Montagu, first Duke of Montagu. In 1713 she sold the New Hall estate (which she had much neglected) to Benjamin Hoare, youngest son of Sir Richard Hoare, banker, and Lord Mayor of London. He never lived here, but removed fine marbles and other materials to embellish Boreham House, which he was then building. He sold New Hall, with the gardens, park, and avenue, in 1737, to John Olmius, Esq., who, after taking down a considerable part of the old mansion, fitted up the remainder as a residence for himself and family. He also laid out the park and grounds with great taste. The present front of the house, which remains much as it was after the wholesale demolition by John Olmius, has seven bay windows, with stone mullions, finished with a plain parapet of modern construction. The great hall is a splendid apartment, 33 feet high, 99 long, and 20 wide. On the ceiling there is a great display of stucco-work, representing cherubim supporting the chandeliers. Lord Waltham's Black Boys were originally in the four small panels, and the arms of the family in the centre. When the last of the Walthams came of age these ornaments were placed in position. The cherubim have been retained in the convent chapel, but the Waltham arms and the Black Boys have been replaced by religious emblems. John Olmius married, 1741, Anne, daughter and heiress of Sir William Billers, Lord Mayor of London ; was created Baron Waltham, of Philipstown in the Kingdom of Ireland, 1762, and, dying March 12, 1764, was buried in Boreham churchyard in the handsome mausoleum of the Walthams. He was succeeded by his eldest son, Drigue-Billers, from whom New Hall was purchased for the present owners, a community of Regular Canonesses of the Holy Sepulchre. The cost of the house and 58 acres of land, amounting to £4,000, was generously defrayed by Mr. Michael McEvoy, brother to one of the nuns. The purchase was effected in November 1798, and the nuns took possession on January 25, 1799. They have been reproached with selling the four rows of lime-trees lining the avenue, said to have been planted in royal times, or before. The truth is that these magnificent trees, 'the pride and boast of the neighbourhood,'

were not purchased with the property, but were only left standing until a purchaser could be found. In the end they were sold for a sum far below the price at which they had been valued.

The only other event of public interest to chronicle since the coming of the nuns is the carrying of the Great Eastern Railway line through the avenue. The first luggage train passed this way in January 1844, and the first passenger train in June of the same year.

It is an interesting fact that the community of nuns to whom New Hall now belongs follow the same Augustinian Rule professed by the Regular Canons of Waltham Abbey, who held possession in 1177, one of those frequent historic coincidences which provoke the platitude : ' History repeats itself.'

MET. BOROUGH OF PUBLIC LIBRARIES POPLAR

ROGER PRESTON,

HIS LETTER, DATED HARWICH, 1666, TO THE OFFICERS OF THE ORDNANCE TOWER OF LONDON.

BY JOSEPH I. GREEN.

THE following letter is copied from the original in my possession, purchased some years since, amongst a quantity of other manuscripts of Messrs. Sotheby and Co., Wellington Street, London. It is an excellent specimen both of the caligraphy and verbosity, as well as the style used in addressing superiors, of the middle half of the seventeenth century. We do not know who was the writer, but it would be difficult to discover a more beautiful specimen of penmanship in every way. The allusion to the Great Fire of London, and the opinion that it was sent by God as a judgment for sin, is quite in keeping with the prevailing thought then in vogue, but it is apparently contrary to the teaching of Christ [St. Luke xiii., verses 2-5]. Why Harwich was such a ' mercylesse place,' except for expensive lodgings, the writer does not tell us, but it was certainly a much more interesting town to the visitor at that period than at the present time.

This extremely neat specimen of seventeenth century caligraphy occupies some thirty-five very closely written lines,

or about half a folio page, with a very wide margin on the left, and none on the right, where the paper is slightly torn. The water-marks are G.C., and a hunting-horn, within an ornamented shield. It is addressed 'To ye Rt. Worll ye officers of ye Ordnance within the Tower of London: These:' It is sealed with a wafer-sized seal bearing the initials of R.M.P. (probably the writer and his wife). A portion of the letter is frayed away at the top right edge, through damp. What remains is as follows:—"Rt Wor[shipfu]ll.

Being made acquainted of yor Wor: pps letter datted ye 13th Instant unto mr ffrancis Newby, of yor resolutions concerning my sallary, I hope my silence, Care and paynes faithfully performed with many Hazards early and late since my Coming to Harwch, will not be worse then formerly Recd from yor Worpps orders which was 6s 8d per diem it is knowne to some members in ye [place] now living, as Mr. Edward Sparkes senior, and Mr. Rothwell that I had 10——and 6s 8d ye least besyde my sallary, however I make not this a president [but] humbly leave it to yor Worpps Consideration, and doe humbly beseech yor W[orshipps] to consider ye Charge and straits I have bin put unto since my coming [to] this mercylesse place, for I could not gett Lodging but upon very h[igh] tearmes to this day, wch hath Cost me about one 4th part of ye mo[ney] from yr worpps wch was 30ld, for which I returne my humble thankes, ever since I came was forced to pay rent at London where I live[d] [before] my coming downe, desiring now to ease this charge, yf yor Worpps [mean] to continue me, I have to yt purpose sent my wyfe home to discharge [our] present being at London, and to remove our goods to Harwch haveing before shee went, tooke a small house, to enter upon Michaellmas ensuing for the reception of ye same. I humbly crave further to tell yor worpps that [I have] bin a sharer as I have bin informed in the late Calamity by fire, of one hogshead of Sweet-sented tobacco, lodgd in Cornewall* and at another place a trunck of goods, of wch losse I am very senceable of as my perticular and the great losse in generall. Knowing yt ye Judgment is sent for sin, yett I know not wherein I should offend yor Worpps or any other concerned in the office there or heere, that my faithfullnesse and diligence should be lessened more now then before, for I assure yor Worpps I never had more care upon my spirit then now, nayther was ever at ye like charge in Carrying my self through ye ymployment, as is very well knowne. for since I came, with yor Worpps money Recd, I have spent 40ld and upwards in this place and hath bin a good Husband to. that I may not be too tedious I humbly crave leave ye premisses Considered yt yf yor worpps will be pleased to retaine me longer and that I shall settell my self heere. then yt yor worpps will be pleased to order my wyfe 15 or 20ld to transport hur self and goods downe. I shall not trouble yor worpps any more this winter ensuing. I have not more, but am

Yor Wprs poore and faithfull Servt,

ROGER PRESTON.

Harwch 18th Septembr, 1666."

* ? Cornhill.

SOME ALTHAMS OF MARK HALL IN THE SEVENTEENTH CENTURY.

(*Continued from p.* 87.)

CONTRIBUTED BY A DESCENDANT.

I VENTURE to hark back from the taking of Colchester to the preceding year, 1647, for the purpose of referring to some letters addressed to James Altham at Mark Hall. The first is from his wife, Alice, who writes from London under date 17 Jan., 1647 :—

'My Deerest, this morning before I received yr leter and now in my beede, I must returne you thancks for it. Bigmore is in such hast hee will not stay tell I am up, but I must tell you I hope I shall see you before the next weeck, for my thincks you have binn gonn a loing time, tharfore, my deere hart, if yr bisness be not extoronary, let mee see you this Sater day ; thancks be to god all yr frinds are well and present thare dew repcts to you. As for nues, I heere none, but that sir thomas farfax yester dined at the Tower, and it is thought the king's children are to be thare,and thare are to be soulders at the tower and Whitt hall and the mues, and sir thomas doe intend to make the tower his heed quarters, but yet the souldrs are quiet and orderly, so wth my deere love to you, I rest yours most faithfully,

A. ALTHAM.'

There is a short letter from the same to the same, sent also by the messenger, Bigmore, and dated 'Chancery Layen the 22 of Jan.,' in which she reports 'the souldrs are still in the Town . . . orderly and quiet.' The king at this date had not yet been arrested at Holdenby House. But the following extracts were written barely two months after his arrest, when Charles I. was being granted, through Cromwell's influence, occasional interviews with his children. They are from a letter by E. Leventhorp, brother of Lady Altham, to his nephew, James Altham, at Mark Hall, dated Lambeth, 13th of August 1647 :—

'Although I cannot find you such newes as is worth your reading, yet I will keep touch with you in writing which I promised at my parting. On Thursday (?) last was the thanksgiving, but truly if you ask me for what, I cannot tell you. . . . The King rowed to Oatlands this Fryday night ; Hampton Court was the place designed, but the Generall's head quarters being at Kingstown it was thought inconvenient.'

Oatlands was the nursery palace of the royal children. Lady Morton, in the previous year, had been permitted by the Parliamentary Army to retire thither from Exeter with the infant

Princess Henrietta, and it was from Oatlands that this same lady, disguised as the wife of a poor French servant, and with a hump of linen on her back, made good her escape with the little princess, and walking all the way to Dover, crossed to Calais and at length delivered the child to her mother, the Queen. The letter makes a further reference to 'the Generall.'

'The Cittie had made great preparation to feast him, but he hath refused it, and withal they had resolved to present him with a gold bason and ewer of great value; but this likewise is cast back, which makes mee thinke it will prove a dangerous tyme for equestrians (?) in the Cittie.'

For the year 1647 there is a correspondence which throws a good deal of light on some earlier history of the Altham family. James Altham, who purchased Mark Hall in 1562 from Henry Parker, Lord Morley, had three sons, with issue, Thomas, Edward and James. James became Lord Chief Baron of the Exchequer, and owner of Oxhey Place in the county of Herts. Edward was the son from whom the Althams we are considering were descended. Edward, without doubt, owned Mark Hall, and from him the place descended to two of his sons in succession. But what about Thomas, the eldest? He had one son, James, and three daughters, one of whom became a nun. There is a letter bearing date March 14, 1639, from this James to her, in which he asks her to

'pray in this solemn time of Lent for the conversion of our Protestant friends, that it would please Almighty God to re-unite them to the holy Roman Catholic religion and also raise up a Catholic family to maintain our name in my father's mansion dwelling-house of Mark Hall and other lands, for now my wife and child being dead, and I dying without issue, all dissends to them, etc.'

James, his father Thomas, his mother, and his sister Mary were all Roman Catholics. Somewhere about this year, 1647, this James Altham died, and no representative of that branch of the family was left but Mary, a nun in a convent abroad. John Altham, the counsellor, went in this year to interview her on behalf of his brother James. John writes to James of certain 'discourses' which he had with her. She told him, amongst other matters, that her father was the eldest brother, that his

father (*i.e.*, the purchaser of Mark Hall) was much displeased with him for changing his religion, that in regard of his religion his father gave from him during the life of the *Lady Judd a great part of his estate; that he lived sometimes at Monmouth, at Hereford, and at Abergavenny, that he was, as she termed it, 'persecuted' for his religion. Concerning the estate which now devolved upon her, she stated 'that the houses in London were valued worth £2,000, that her brother had an annuity . . . during his life, that upon (?) the estate in Latton was formerly a religious house of the Order of St. Austin.' I gather from these 'discourses' of the nun with her cousin John, that Mark Hall itself was never really in the possession of her father, Thomas, although her brother had spoken of it as 'my father's mansion dwelling house' (I suppose he meant that it should rightfully have been his), but that there was house-property in London which was his, also a certain part of the estate in Latton, upon which there had been once a religious house. Now, all her father's property came to her. She was fifty-eight years of age. James, her first cousin once removed, had written to her 'to confirm what your brother always intended, and what by the will of the preceding ancestors, was always designed to the heirs male of the family, which now by your brother's death, is myself.' She writes to him under date April 12, 1647, that she 'heartily affords her deare cousin her brother's temporal estate, but also the eternal inheritance,' and begs of her cousin that he will contribute towards her maintenance as her brother had done. The letters of this Mary Altham are the best specimens of caligraphy I have ever seen. She addresses her cousin James of Mark Hall, 'Honoured cosen,' and signs herself 'Your loving cosen, Mary Altham.' I possess her deed of resignation, and other documents relating to the transaction in English and French, signed and executed by her in the presence of a public notary at Bruges.

She assigns the London lands and tenements to Sir William Halton, Baronet, and William Smyth, Esq., for the use of James Altham. There can be little doubt that the London houses in Love Lane and elsewhere, about which there is a good deal of

*Lady Judd, daughter of . . . Matthewe, of Colchester, was the second wife of James Altham, who purchased Mark Hall. James Altham was her fourth husband. Her third husband was Sir Andrew Judd, Lord Mayor of London in 1550. She erected a monument in Latton Church in memory of James Altham. She was, at her death, buried with him in the chancel at Latton, where there is a very remarkable inscription in her praise.

correspondence later between James Altham and his brother Leventhorp, were the houses he received from his cousin Mary, the nun. At the same time, all Altham property in Latton must have now come into the possession of James Altham of Mark Hall.

John Altham, after this transaction between his brother and cousin, seems to have settled down again in his chambers in London. The following letter, written by him to his mother, is addressed to Lady Altham at 'Horum Hall,' July 6th, 1653:

'Maddam, I received your Ladishippes letter y^e^ last weeke w^th^ y^e^ inclosed, w^ch^ I delivered to my Brother to be sent forward by y^e^ first [opportunity] w^ch^ I doubt not but he did accordingly, though I have not seen him since. The letters to Ned [Edward Altham] were likewise delivered to him, w^ch^ I suppose he hath sent before this, w^ch^ I heartily wish may have good success. Maddam, heere is little newes, only y^e^ Great Councell met at White Hall upon Mounday, y^e^ Generall made them a speech near two hours long; and for that day they broke up when that was ended, only they agreed to meete yesterday at y^e^ house of Comons in Westminster and sought god byprayers for a blessing upon their Councells. They did not call to their assistance any Divine that I heard, this exercise continued from nine a clocke in y^e^ morning till sixe at night. This day they are to meete againe to choose their Speaker, and appoint other officers. My Lady Smith is nearing to Stowe, my Lady Bankes went out of Towne upon Saturday last, and as I believe she is this weeke for y^e^ West. Maddam be pleased to accept of my humble duty, and I desire my service to my Brother and Sister, soe in hast I subscribe Your dutifull and obedient sonne.

J. Altham.

The above letter refers, of course, to that assembly known as 'the Barebones Parliament.' It met in July 1653, after Cromwell had ejected 'the Rump.' It may be mentioned, by the way, that when he entered the House to do so, it was to Oliver St. John, whose name is on the monument in Latton Church, and who was husband of the first cousin of the owner of Mark Hall, that he said, 'I am come to do what grieves me to the heart.' The officers of the army then proceeded to nominate a provisional Council of State, consisting of eight officers of high rank and four civilians, with Cromwell at their head. This Council, we are told by Green, selected a hundred and fifty-six men from lists furnished by the Congregationalists, 'the bulk of whom were men, like Ashley Cooper, of good blood and free estates; and the

proportion of burgesses (such as the leather merchant, Praise-God Barebones, whose name was eagerly seized on as a nick-name for the body to which he belonged) seems to have been much the same as in other Parliaments.' John Altham is evidently referring to that speech of Cromwell's, which Green calls 'a burst of rugged eloquence,' in which he exhorted the members to be 'men fearing God.' The speech closed their sitting on that day. The next was the day of prayer conducted without 'the assistance of any Divine.' And on the third day they chose their Speaker and elected other officers.

Lady Altham's closing years during the time of the Commonwealth seem to have been full of family anxieties. Judging from her letters, there appears to have been nothing she felt more keenly than the submission of her son Edward to the Roman Church. Edward had been living abroad for several years. There are letters written by him to his brother James (who appears to have been the administrator of his affairs) from Croning, Orleans, Paris, Angers, Leghorn. One short visit he appears to have paid to England in 1647, when he writes from his sister Joan Smith's house, Horham Hall:—'*Sir Thomas Bendish is going as agent from England to Constantinople, which I am confident you have heard of by reason of your nigh aquaintance with him, with whom I should gladly goe if it may be for my profit, as I conceive it may, if you present me to him as a small traveller.' He thinks, too, that Sir Thomas Bendish would be glad of the help of his money, and would give him good security for it. Edward seems to have gone with Sir Thomas to Constantinople, but he did not stay there long, as, writing to his mother from Orleans, April 23, 1648, he says, 'I should have looked twice before I had leapt once to Constantinople, but distractions in spirit make a man desperate in designs to escape out of prison . . . peradventure I am a looser by that enterprise in estate; and though I hazarded my person soe, yet, I blesse God, I purchased my liberty.'

In 1650 he was in Rome, where he studied Hebrew and other languages. He appears to have been getting more and more unhappy as to England. He speaks of 'our own longe lived distractions . . . which have for years past not only divorced friends and relations from a mutuall society, but

*Sir Thomas Bendish, second baronet (now extinct), entered on his embassy in 1647, and resided at the Turkish Court fourteen years.

distracted severall persons within themselves; myselfe participates too much of either unhappinesse.' He becomes more and more impressed with Rome and her people. He tells in 1651 of the thousands of pilgrims going to the Jubilee. 'Here is no cobbler goes beyond his last nor noe tanner beyond his leather, every one tends his profession, which makes them live in a most swete harmony. Here are churches most richly adorned with marbles of diverse sorts. S. Peter's is the greatest, such a fabrick as the world knows not the like for a temple. My Rabby tould mee that Solomon's temple was not comparable to it for bignesse nor for riches. . . . In their churches the people give respect to pictures and statues, but I could never believe that they adored them for gods, as I heard in England preached in pulpits.' He proposed in this year (1651) a journey to Jerusalem. His people at home did not like it, and it was abandoned. 'I have such a Rabbi here as he has brought Jerusalem to me.' . . . He writes more about Rome, 'the general tongues of the people, a continual pentecost,' the ancient ruins which the Primitive Christians built with the sweat of their brows, the catacombs and sepulchres, etc.

In 1652, Edward appears to have been received into the Roman Church. Lady Altham, his mother, writes to James:—

'Deere sonne, let us omitte noe Christian duty to wine him home to us again, least y^e^ insinuating sycophants w^th^ who hee is rise up in Judgment against us for there diligence, who will compasse sea and land to gaine a proselyte. O then, what cares and paynes and prayers shoulde wee use to regain a sonne and brother going astray; and pardon deere fathere, mee and y^e^ rest of his frindes for our carelesse connivance in suffering him to live soe longe in a place of perill and danger.'

I possess three very distressed and loving letters of Lady Altham's to Edward himself, one of which she commences thus:—'Deere Ned, for so I must still stile you, although y^e^ act of revoltinge from God's truth, and confirmed still in y^e^ letters, hath and still doth bringe such sorrow and anguish to my poor disconsolate soule.'

Later in the letter, she speaks of the city of Rome itself, thus: 'If wee may iudg of y^e^ tree by y^e^ frute, what more horred things have byn hatched in any place then there.'

Thus it was that mother and son looked with different eyes on

the great metropolis. It was at this time that Lady Altham wrote to the Bishop of Exeter to get him to try to influence Edward, as has been already stated. (See p. 77.) The Bishop certainly must have done his best, although to no purpose, for James Altham in a letter to his mother writes:

'I think your Ladyship hath resolved upon a very fitting gratuity for the Bishop, a dozen of fine handkerchiefs, which when you please I shall take care to send to him.' There is a remarkable passage in a letter from the convert to his brother John Altham, dated Pessaro, November 9, 1655, as to a royal personage who also submitted to the Roman obedience, the remarkable Christina of Sweden.

'The Pope's state is in greate equipage to give a roiall reception to the Queene of Suetheland, which is a convert to the faith, a singular example of piety and devotion to quit a kingdom for paradise. That which I admire at in this subject is her learning, whose curiosity like the loadston drew to her court the greatest schollars amongst the protestants of this age, Grotius, Salmasius, wide as the two poles of the Universe for knowledge; nevertheless, having dived into the Fathers of the primitive Churche this roiall personage could not be satisfied with all their sophistry to make her believe contrary to what she found registered in the writings of Tertullian, S. Cyprian, Gregory Nazianzen, etc. Wee expect her here the latter eand of this monthe. She lodges in the Cardinall's Pallace. She has with her above two hundred persons, many of greate quality. I shall give you a relation more exactly of her when I see her. She has writt a letter to the Pope which I will send you likewise. The character which we have had of her at present is that shee was almost fifteen daies without shifting which is oftentimes daubed with inck. She reades much, sleepes but three hours in the night, awakes in live (?) countinance, manly in her behaviour, courtious in her discourse, negligent in her habit, vivacious in her actions. Greate preparations are made for her in Rome, which time will demonstrate.'

Leventhorpe Altham, in a letter to his brother seven years later, speaks of a report that came from Sir Th. Dorrel that Edward Altham had at length retired 'into the convent of the Dominicans.' Leventhorpe did not believe it, and the evidence of later letters makes me doubt if it were the case.

In a letter from Lady Altham, dated Chancery Lane, 24 of June 1649 (the year of the execution of King Charles), to her son James at Mark Hall, she speaks of having gone with her daughter, Joan Smith, and husband to Bath for taking the waters.

She had been ill, and the baths had not effected much improvement. In this letter Lady Altham shows that she is anxious about the children of another daughter, Lady Halton, who had recently died. She writes :—'I thank you for your kynd letter and for your care in having somewhat settled upon your dear sister's daughter, but I feare wee shall not have our desire, for seeing Sr William would not seale to ye marriage bond before this, there is little hope hee will do it now but I shall not fayle to persuad what I may, but as yet I have not seene him since I came to town, and I heare none of his owne frindes have seen him since his marryage, wh makes mee thinke hee is so taken up wth his fine wife and new coach yt hee hath yet noe leasure to look on his olde frindes, yet I have sent your man baker this morning to him to see if hee will yet seale ye bond, or else to coe and speak wth mee, yet I confesse I have little delight to see him because I have so little hope to prevayle wt him for what is good for his children, and though hee pretends much affection both to them and there deer Mother, yet hee hath made small expressions of it since hee parted wth her, and therefore thinke his love is more verball then reall, for if it were so hee would not scruple to doe what wee have so often desired and hee promised.'

John Altham writes to his brother James three years after this, June 18, 1652, 'Sir William Halton hath been with me several times this last week past, and hath made this proposition, which he desired me to impart to you ; if you will deliver in his statute he will settle that land he lately bought of Mr. Greene (wch as I have heard is neere one hundred pounds p. ann.) upon his sonne, paying to his sister fifteen hundred pounds ; he is very sedulous to effect this ; what advantage he propounds to himselfe in it I know not, and therefore am ye more apt to believe he intendeth ye good of his children only by it, who as farre as I can discerne will by this meanes be better secured, for I conceive all his other lands were bound by settlements more antient than this statute, and therefore subject to it only during his life. . . . Sr, according to his request I have acquainted you with his proposall, but submitt it to your consideration.'

The interest at this point seems to pass to the youngest son of Sir Edward and Lady Altham, the last of the five whose names appear on the monument in Latton Church (see p. 75). The first of the two Edwards died young. The second has been referred to. The youngest of the brothers was Emanuel. Emanuel stands in striking contrast to his brothers. James was the ardent cavalier and dignified country gentleman ; John the thorough lawyer; Leventhorp (who succeeded James at Mark Hall) was the man of business. Edward's was the mind most

exercised with theological matters. Emanuel, however, seems, from the letters, to stand out as the wild, roving character, reckless and extravagant. Yet Emanuel is affectionate towards his mother and brothers, and seems to have his penitent moments amid all his extravagance. On April 12, 1652, he writes to his mother from Paris :—'On Tuesday last I came to toune, and next Monday, God willing, I doe intend for y^e^ Armye wich lyes some thirty mills frome Parris, thar my Lorde Digbye lyes with his forses ; I have a letter frome a persone of honnor to him ; and what y^t^ letter will woorke I shall give your Ladishipe a more perticular account, after I have had a triall.'

The following month saw Emanuel in trouble. He writes to his brother Leventhorpe from Paris, June 3rd :—'Since my last unto you itt has pleased God to cast mee in to my enimies hands, whar I was most barberously bled, and hade I nott bine delivered by the Prince of Candys one Garde I believe before this that I hade nott bine in a condition to right. My Lorde Digbys Cornett was taken with mee, thay stript us and tooke all frome us, and hade nott my Cornett a hade y^e^ Prince his passport thay had chott us for whatt wee hade. We ware taken by St. Dennis we ware of our party sume foretin hors y^e^ enimye nott above a douzen. When wee came up to them, itt was our resolution to fight y^m^ but our hors thought thay should have y^e^ worst rune all away and leafe my cornett and myselfe to thar mursy, wich would have bine verye littill hade nott my cornett pulled out suddenly y^e^ Prince passport, wich when thay saw, thay durst nott touch us, but brought us to towne, and imprisoned us nott in a common prison, butt putt us in a chamber garnisht, butt as I told you before they tooke evirye thinge frome us. Whilst wee ware in this greatt extremytye, unexpected came y^e^ Prince of Candys, Captaine of y^e^ Gard and delivered us, and one of y^e^ Rouges y^t^ hade y^e^ Gard of my Bodye and bled me soe barbarously, y^t^ when I made my cumplaint to y^e^ Captaine hee beatt him verye mutch ; att last caused boith this souldear and myselfe to be brought to y^e^ Prince ; soe I did lay hold of his base actions, and for y^m^ hee was committed to prisone, and lyes at my murseye weather I shall hange him ore noe ; I believe I shall, for hee is not abell to restore my losses, and for his cumrayds thay are all fleed upone itt soe I believe I shall make him an example ; y^t^ others who may unfortunately fall into thar hands may fynde more mersye. In the interim be pleased to lett my brother Altham understand of my misfortune, and for a new recrutte, I shall leve itt to him, for hee has y^e^ most interest.'

Then come requests for money.

'Twice a week,' writes Leventhorp to James Altham,

'Manuel importunes me for new supply . . . for my part I look upon him as a lost man for any employment, and therefore am of opinion what money shall be sent him any more upon that pretence will be so much cast away, he not being of a capacity to govern himself.' Leventhorp thinks he had better come home. On July 24 he writes to James for £50. The money appears to be his own. But on May 16, 1653 he writes to his eldest brother such sentences as these: 'There is a vast estate gone, but I am not the first it has happened to.' 'A forlorn brother that has by vanity spent his fortune.' 'I desire pardon,' 'Shall be careful to keep my promise and strive to live although cut off from the vine. My humble duty to your vine. 'Underwritten do acknowledge to have received my full portion leaft me by my deare father from the hands of my brother James Altham, and that I have not anything to pretend to more from him. Witness my hand Amsterdam 16 of May 1653.'

EM. ALTHAM.

To his mother he writes from the borders of Germany having just come from the French Army. He has had her prayers, has passed many 'escapes and dangers.':—'I tell you that you may give thanks. God has blessed me with health and limbs. Many comrades have lost both. I have done my best to obtain a fortune or a grave. My trust shall be in God. I confess my follies, and not husbanding my plentiful fortune.' A letter from her ladyship will be a cordial:—'I fear your Ladyship has not been well. Madam, pardon me for being so free in my discourse.' He wishes her length of days and eternal happiness with all her children.

In 1655 the good Lady Altham, the faithful mother to all these children, died. On April 15 of that year Emanuel appears to have been in London, and Leventhorpe writes to his brother John:—

'I have received a letter . . . from Emanuel desiring me to permit him to enjoy his part of those things that were left by my Ledy . . . I send you my answer to his on purpose opened, that having viewed it you may at the delivery thereof take occasion to advise him to be cautious how he engageth himself in this towne from whence he must be wholly restrained for otherwise he will never be kept within bounds.'

In 1657 we find Emanuel staying with Sir John and Lady Tufton. Lady Tufton was Mary, the only child of James and

Alice Altham of Mark Hall, the 'pretty sweet Moll,' the 'black eyes' of earlier letters. The marriage does not appear to have been a very happy one, for they separated at a later date. Emanuel writes from their house at Bobbing to his brother John acknowledging, as usual, his past 'trangressings,' lamenting that his Brother Altham will not grant a request he has made, but adding 'it shall never make a breach between us brothers.' Russell y_e Taylor is hee y^t I am most ingaged and hee has to Dymon rings of mine.'

On August 20th 1658, Leventhorpe writes again about Emanuel to his brother James at Mark Hall, 'it is a tedious thing to be thus constantly troubled with his impertinency,' and at the end he says :—'For news the report is this: Yesterday Prauelin was to be surrendered; the Duke of Buckingham carried to the Tower; the Protector relapsed; the Holland ambassador resolute upon terms not agreeable; the king of Swedland stronge and is thought will absolutely dispossess the king of Denmark by reason of a discovery by the Intercepting also of a design to deliver the Sound up to the Hollanders.'

The 'news' reported in this letter shows how ill Oliver Cromwell was. On the third of September he died, just after the occurrence of an awful storm.

The Council of Richard Cromwell, his son, summoned a new Parliament on the old system of election. Sir John Tufton, of the Moat, Kent, appears to have been invited by his countrymen in Kent to become one of the knights of that shire. He sends a letter to his father-in-law, James Altham, from London, to say that he is going into Kent on this business.

'I know not that my wife's company will advantage me. . . . I should prefer her health before all the honours and advantages the world can give me, and so terrible is the apprehension of her relapse to me that whatsoever of importunity or interest I can move with, is employed to overthrow her purpose for Kent, and if she should venture thither I take heaven to witness she is as refractory to my advice as disobedient to parents. I most humbly thank you for your affectionate regards in making the offer of her native air; she hath her liberty also to continue here, and if she will make choice of that only which is forbidd, I wish she had less of her mother Eve.'

On April 12, 1659, Peter Tyrrill (who had married Bridget, the youngest sister of James Altham, and was created a baronet July 1665) writes to his brother-in-law at Mark Hall, that he purposes a visit to Shingle Hall, when he hopes to see him.

'This toune,' he says also, 'affords noe neues. Some debates there have been in the house about the exile, but nothing is settled yet for the future. . . . The newes of the peace between France and Spain is still confirmed.'

On May 29, 1660, the exiled King (Charles II.) made his entry into London amid joyful acclamations. Emanuel Altham seems to have been one of a large number of men who were the King's Body Guard for a few weeks after his arrival. The men after a while were disbanded, and Emanuel in an undated letter makes the following lament to his brother James: 'For our Gards, this morning our squadrone is to bee disbanded, and for our servis nott one pennye consyderatione which makes us all in sad conditione sume few will be chosen to make upe y^e^ to hundred y^t^ shall stand Butt how many ore who I know nott.' Emanuel, however, was not altogether thrust aside. He had interest, which was probably exercised on his behalf, for we find him in 1663 still employed in the King's military service. The festivities held in honour of the newly-arrived King no doubt suited him down to the ground. His only fear was as to his future. There is a letter from him to James at Mark Hall, dated July 3, two days before the great City Feast at the Guild-hall, which is described in Evelyn's *Diary*, when all Parliament, both Lords and Commons, were present.

'Sir, I have not mutch to say, but presenting my service and to give you a small account of our daylye indeavours Butt now allmost disparing of y^t^ which we did cumfort ourselves with of beeing confirmed, wee doe expect to bee discharged. After this Grand Feast which y^e^ Squardrone I am under has y^e^ Honnor to attend his sacred Majestye in to y^e^ Cittye: and y^t^ to bee our last servis to him upon this account of Liufe Garde. I am daylye strugling, butt cannot make any advans. To morro I shall waite one Mr. Russell who lyves att Brooke House, butt I am afrayd thear will bee littell to bee expected. His brother understanding y^e^ professione, will hardlye entertaine any cummand but upon good Tearmes, soe all my booestrings fayle. All my hopes now depend upon my nobell Lord of Carbery, who has bine highelye civill to mee, and does assure mee y^t^ if myselfe ore any frend of mine cann thinke of any thinge, he will nott onelye speake to y^e^ Kinge, butt will present mee to him. I could wishe your occations did call you to London. I presume to bee happye in itt (Butt patiance is y^e^ woord) I am:

S^r^ your most affec. Bro. and servant,

EMM. ALTHAM.

'My servis to your Ladye and cousins. All your frends heare are verye well and presents thar servis. My Lady Tufton goes y^e^ next Tuesday for Kentt.'

The 'nobell Lord of Carbery,' mentioned in the above letter, had married Frances Altham, daughter of Sir James Altham, Kt., of Oxhey Place, Herts., and granddaughter of Sir James Altham, Lord Chief Baron of the Exchequer in the reign of James I., who built a chapel, where worship is still carried on, at Oxhey. Lady Carbery, the 'nobell Lorde's wife,' was consequently Emanuel Altham's second cousin. She had died in 1650. Lord Carbery had been a distinguished Cavalier leader during the civil war, having been Lieut.-General for the counties of Carmarthen, Pembroke, and Cardigan. At the restoration he was constituted Lord-President of the Principality of Wales. Jeremy Taylor had found a refuge during part of the rebellion at Golden Grove, Lord and Lady Carbery's house in Carmarthenshire. The third part of *The Great Exemplar* was, in the first edition, dedicated to Frances Lady Carbery. Jeremy Taylor preached a funeral sermon upon her death at Golden Grove. 'I choose not to declare her extraction and genealogy,' he said, 'it was indeed fair and noble. . . . She was married young, and besides her business of religion seemed to be ordained in the providence of God, to bring to this honorable family a part of a fair fortune, and to leave behind her a fairer issue worth ten times her portion.'

MET. BOROUGH OF POPLAR PUBLIC LIBRARIES

THE SAMPLER.

BY FLORENCE LEWER.

LONG before the dawn of history, in the days of our first parents, when, as John Milton wrote (*Paradise Lost*),

> 'Those leaves
> They gathered, broad as Amazonian targe,
> And with what skill they had together sewed,
> To gird their waist,'

the needle had asserted its usefulness. Since those remote times the art and craft of the needle has become indissolubly associated with the comfort and well being of civilized man, and especially of the home. Its methods and modes have varied in different ages, at different periods, and in different countries, but its use, once recognised, never grew obsolete. One interesting develop-

ment of the art was seen in the sampler, which formerly had an enormous vogue in English households.

The word is derived from the Latin *exemplar*, 'whence,' says Dr. Johnson, 'it is sometimes written sampler.' Little is known of the origin of this species of embroidery and an endeavour to discover its source will lead us into the pleasant byways of the history of needlework. It has been shrewdly surmised that the sampler may have been evolved from the embroideries that clothe many an Egyptian mummy. Mrs. R. E. Head, however, is of opinion that the English sampler is of Italian origin. In an article contributed to 'The Reliquary' (vol. viii., 1902) she stated that she had recently 'obtained some fragments of Italian towels or table-covers of the late sixteenth or early seventeenth century, the borders of which were worked in red silk with patterns that markedly resembled the mysterious bands in our English samplers.' This comparative evidence is to a certain extent valuable, but of course is not necessarily conclusive.

The sampler, samcloth, or sampleth, as it has been variously spelt, as far as existing specimens can be taken as a proof, originated during the reign of Charles I., but frequent allusions in literature to earlier samplers demonstrate that it must have been familiar long before this period. Perhaps the earliest definite mention of a sampler is in 1546; when it occurs in the will of one Margaret Thomson, of Freston, in Lincolnshire. The document was proved at Boston on May 25th, 1546, and the testator states:—'I gyve to Alys Pynchebeck my systers doughter my sawmpler with semes.'

The poet, John Skelton (1460?—1529), who is thought to have been a native of Norfolk, alludes to 'The sampler to sowe on, the laces to embroide.' William Shakespeare, whose observant eye nothing escaped, says in *A Midsummer Night's Dream*:—

> 'We, Hermia, like two artificial gods,
> Have with our needles created both one flower,
> Both on one sampler, sitting on one cushion.'

And in *Titus Andronicus* we have an interesting sign that even in the dramatist's day there were already some who regarded it as boredom to work a sampler:—

> 'Fair Philomela, she but lost her tongue,
> And in a tedious sampler sew'd her mind.'

Sir Philip Sidney (1554-1586), that flower of chivalry and pink of courtesy, wrote in his *Arcadia* :—

'O love, why dost thou in thy beautiful sampler set such a work for my desire, to set out which is impossible ?'

Another reference, in *The Crowne Garland of Golden Roses Gathered out of England's Royall Garden* (1612) by Richard Johnson (1573—1659 ?), to 'a short and sweet sonnet made by one of the maides of honour of Queen Elizabeth, which she sowed uppon a sampler in red silke to a New Tune, or Phillida flouts Me,' further establishes the custom of sampler-stitching prior to the era of the first Charles. In *Notes and Queries* (December 23rd, 1899) Mr. W. Elliott Harrison, of Fort Madison, U.S.A., stated that he owned a sampler worked by his ancestress, Mary Harrison, aged nine, in 1622, which bore the lines :—

'In Sharon's lovely rose
Immortal beauties shine,
Its sweet refreshing fragrance shows
Its origin divine.'

John Milton, in *Comus* (a Masque presented at Ludlow Castle in 1634), emphasizes the humble esteem in which sampler work was already held in some quarters. Comus says :—

'Coarse complexions
And cheeks of sorry grain will serve to ply
The sampler, and to tease the huswife's wool.'

These quotations clearly show that samplers were common in the sixteenth and early seventeenth centuries, and it is difficult to conceive why none of so early a date has survived. Presumably the bulk of them perished under wear and tear, or from the devastations of the clothes-moth. It seems clear, also, that some were considered of too slight importance to be cherished as heirlooms, or at all events handed down from generation to generation. Possibly many partook of a form and character so unusual to our eyes that they have ceased to be recognised as samplers.

The craze for needlework of all sorts was strong during the reign of Queen Elizabeth, whose vanity and love of finery were so inordinate that she was the possessor of two thousand dresses. Philip Stubbes, the Puritan pamphleteer, writing in the *Anatomie of Abuses* (1583), says men 'were deck'd out in fineries even to their shirts, which are wrought throughout with needleworke of silke curiously stitched with open seams.'

In France, at the same period, a similar fondness for richness and variety in clothing was carried to such extravagance that Catherine de Medici was presented with a petition of grievances, which urged that the revenue obtained from agriculture was being wasted in embroideries, needlework, trimmings, etc. The Countess of Wilton mentions in her work on *The Art of Needlework* (1842) that many books, with patterns for needlework, were published in good Queen Bess's time, but although diligent search has been made for volumes answering to that description, our industry has gone unrewarded. If any of these books existed, the question arises, was the sampler evolved from them? Books were rare and costly to produce in those days of black-letter printing and the young would in all probability not be allowed to utilise, for the purpose of daily study, the patterns or samples contained in them. Is it not likely that some wise mother or teacher may have copied, roughly at first, these instructions on coarse canvas with some elementary designs? It is a matter of deep regret that no Tudor sampler now survives: not only would it have elucidated the mystery that surrounds the samplers spoken of by the poets we have quoted, but also have enabled us to trace the continuity of style, pattern, and stitch in the earliest extant samplers. Imagination sometimes tempts us to perceive in the case of some early samplers a faint imitation or trace of Eastern needlework, as if the fair worker had copied some example of Oriental embroidery. But the English touch is too characteristic, too indicative of its period, to warrant the conjecture. At any rate, the workmanship in most instances is so decidedly original that any suggestion of slavish copying is untenable.

The earliest existing samplers in England date, we have said, from the time of Charles I., and the theory is at least plausible that his Queen, Henrietta Maria, may have encouraged the working of samplers, since needlework had long been in high repute in her country of France. The spread of education during this eventful reign may (one is almost inclined to say must) have contributed largely to the cult of the sampler. Be the theory right or wrong, it was from the examples of this period that the sampler of the following 200 years was derived. The samplers of the early seventeenth century have never been excelled; the graceful proportions, the open thread work, the

various patterns in coloured silks stitched in parallel rows, the applied designs of open lace work, complete an ensample of delicate tenderness and beauty. As regards the tapestry and stump-work pictures of the same period, we find traces of their influence in many of the samplers of this time. These pictures were undoubtedly the creation of expert needleworkers, and were not intended as examples for the novice.

The sampler was intended primarily to teach the art of

1790.

needlework. Its history, as revealed in its different forms and ornamentations, has a pathetic human interest, for it portrays during the various stages of its existence not only the styles of stitches, colour, alphabet, decoration, verse, and platitude, but gives an insight into the domestic life, the religious and social influences that were at work in the household and the home. If its *raison d'être* were to teach the art of needlework, then, in current familiar phrase, it supplied a 'long-felt want.' At first the sampler was generally destitute of any clue whereby its owner

or its author might be identified. However, as household luxury advanced, and more abundant supplies of fine linen, embroidery, bed or table napery were stored, the young members of the family required training in needlework in increasing numbers, and this led to a larger quantity of samplers being produced. These would naturally bear some mark to indicate their creator or possessor; hence doubtless sprang the idea of working the initials or the full name and date on the sampler. In the earlier examples, the greater portion is given up to various patterns of stitchwork, and sometimes lace work, a small part only being devoted to the alphabet. In some, even this is omitted. John Bloundelle-Burton, the well-known novelist, has a sampler worked in 1718, by his grandmother's great-grandmother, which contains no alphabet, 'but is very full of other quaint matter. To wit, she subscribes at the bottom, "This work in hand my friends may have when I am dead and laid in grave. Mary Beuan [Bevan] ageed 10 years, 1718."' This sampler was strongly religious in its nature. 'There are,' writes its owner (*Notes and Queries*, July 30, 1892), 'Moses and Aaron on either side (most beautifully worked and with their colours of red and blue as fresh as though done to-day), the Ten Commandments and the Lord's Prayer in the middle, and a quaint old hymn, the original of which I have never been able to find in print.' Hymns were in great request for these designs. But the lines composed by the famous hymn-writer, the Rev. John Newton, for the sampler of his niece, Elizabeth Catlett, were especial favourites, and ran:—

'Jesus, permit Thy gracious Name to stand
As the first effort of an infant's hand;
And while her fingers o'er the canvas move,
Engage her tender thoughts to seek Thy love;
With Thy dear children let her have a part,
And write Thy name, Thyself, upon her heart.'

Sometimes the juvenile seamstress gave a proprietary touch to her sampler by altering the second line to suit her own case. Thus wee Mary Arabella Pearson stitched 'As the first work of Arabella's hand' instead of following Newton literally.

All samplers were worked in parallel rows of decorative patterns. The Indian pink, pineapple, and acorn are familiar features in seventeenth-century wotk. Doubtless the acorn was in commemoration of the Boscobel oak in which Charles II. concealed himself after the battle of Worcester (1651). Samplers

of the early Stewart period are bright and brilliant in colour, as might be expected, judging from our knowledge of the life and dress of the people.

A little later the alphabet became predominant on the sampler, and smaller space was devoted to patterns of conventional flowers and bands of ornamental patterns. In a sampler dated 1737, which, like the early Carolian specimens, is without a border, we note the quaint earnestness of thought in the verses:—

'Mary Nicols is my name,
And England is my nation.
Retford is my dwelling place,
And God is my salvation.'

Another, which we believe to be an Essex sampler, dated 1790 (see p. 150), shows that the chastening power of the Puritan revival struck it roots deeply:—

'Learn to condemn all Praise Betimes,
For Flattery is the Nurse of Crimes;
With early Virtue Plant thy Breast,
The specious arts of vice detest.'

In these lines we notice the same undercurrent of sentiment, feeling, and moral reflection, which permeated the works of Samuel Richardson, Hannah More, Mrs. Barbauld, Mrs. Chapone, and other writers and novelists of the second half of the eighteenth century. The influence also of the labour and teaching of John Wesley and George Whitefield can be traced. Those who have read Wesley's diary will remember his remarkable reception by the 'poor loving simple-hearted people' of Colchester in 1758.

Times that try men's souls bear a great part in the forming of the character of a people, and this influence was indirectly reflected in the verses of the samplers of the late eighteenth century and the early years of the nineteenth century, the samplers themselves becoming more lugubrious and dismal, and as uninteresting as the Georgian architecture. The well-known verse by Mrs. Mary Masters is chosen as a specimen of the brightest and most acceptable sentiments of this period:—

'Tis Religion that can give
Sweetest pleasures while we live;
'Tis religion must apply
Solid comforts when we die.'

In a sampler worked by Susannah Pearson, of Writtle School, dated 1821, which contains no alphabet and of which we give an illustration, the worker quotes from 'The Tempest,'

1821.

and with wonderful philosophy and liberality bequeathes to her friends her sampler in these rhymes :—

'This work I have done my friends may have
When I am dead and in my grave.
Lord, grant that I in peace may die,
And live with Christ eternally.'

It must also be borne in mind that samplers of this class did not carry out the purpose for which this species of embroidery was invented. This end, however, was not ignored, as many of the samplers produced at this time and a little later were embellished with houses, windmills, Scriptural subjects, grotesque animals, birds, vines and names, all proper illustrations of the objects they were intended to subserve, inasmuch as they were fitted to adorn the sitting or school-room. They were, in short, the show-pieces of the girls' early efforts in the field of needlework, and as such they should always be regarded. So considered, the sampler filled a most useful place in the scheme of education of its day.

1664.

The shape and ornamentation of the sampler evince an interesting sequence and, by the aid of the illustrations given, the period, and the rise and the obliteration of it may be traced. The sampler of the Stewart days was a long, narrow strip of linen or canvas, intended to be wound upon a cylinder or roll. No samplers of later date adopt this form, so the point is worthy of remembrance in an undated sampler. The earliest example extant in England is dated 1648, and was shown at the exhibition of Old English Tapestry Pictures, Embroideries, and Samplers in 1900. It is a long sampler on unbleached linen, in divisions, with arabesque ornaments of oak leaves, acorns, etc., signed A.S. We give an illustration of a sampler which was the property of the late Mr. I. Chalkley Gould, dated 1664, which is of exceptional beauty, and shows lace work, in addition to silk stitching. It is 3 feet long by 7 inches broad, and is divided into the usual cross strips. Black and white reproduction conveys but a faint notion of the vivid yet charming effect of the reds and greens employed, although they do indicate the excellent

character of the stitchwork. Like many other examples, this is wrought on canvas, but the material is of finer texture than usual. In a sampler dated 1667, the stitching is somewhat coarse, and worked upon a base of rough canvas. Adam and Eve are depicted in hairy garments, with silken mops of hair, their faces suggesting those of King Charles's spaniels! Some of the flowers were worked separately, petal on petal, and then applied to the sampler—an effective method of decoration, rendering the picture realistic.

These examples have no border, and a border has not been found on any sampler prior to the beginning of the eighteenth century. Some of these early samplers, as already stated, have designs in lace, which are simply made by drawing the threads and working a border to contain the pattern, as shown at the foot of the illustration dated 1664. In place of various styles of needlework of coloured silk and open lace work, the samplers of the closing years of the seventeenth century witnessed a more general adoption of the alphabet and fewer patterns. Verses and moral maxims also made their appearance at this time. It has been repeatedly stated that the Stewart rose ceased to bloom on samplers from about 1700, being replaced by the carnation conventionally treated. This cannot be accurate, as there is little doubt that the rose was worked on many a sampler of later date, the pattern of which can be seen in old glass of the Jacobite period.

The stitches used in the samplers were of simple character, viz., the ordinary cross stitch, back stitch, and long stitch; late specimens show the introduction of what is known as the bird's eye stitch.

Maps in needlework came into existence about 1770 and most have a border round them. Some of the earlier examples are in cross stitch, but generally tent or outline stitch was utilised for this purpose. These maps vary in shape, being square, round, oval, or oblong, and their geographical features are generally distorted in adaptation to the selected form. Minor details, such as county boundaries, are also modified to meet the exigencies of long names of towns, etc., inserted.

The borders of these samplers are sometimes exquisitely worked with wreathed flowers, leaves, and bands and loops of ribbon. We give an illustration of an Essex sampler of map

work, worked by an ancestor of Miss C. Fell Smith, who was born in 1794, and was therefore about twelve years old. It is signed at foot in needlework, within a wreath :—'A Map of Europe, worked by Hannah Smith, at Kelvedon School, 1806.'* The division of the countries is by very fine chenille, sewn on.

1806.

The lettering, in fine black silk, is of wonderful accuracy and clearness, although our photograph is not of the best.

The latest Essex example we have is a sampler dated 1859, worked in cross stitch of silk. It contains the alphabet and the following exhortation :—'Humble yourself in the sight of God and He shall lift you up. Draw nigh to God and He will draw nigh to you.' It is signed in full, 'Sarah Baker, September 20, 1859.

*Unfortunately there is a spot partly obscuring the date in the photograph.

Aged 11 years. Harlow Churchgate School.' For so late a date it is exceptional, as it contains no ornamentation beyond the single border. It is a sampler, pure and simple.

The last fifty years of the eighteenth century were rich in variety of form of the sampler; the pictorial side advanced rapidly, and included, as we have said, windmills, houses, animals, birds, flowers and Scriptural subjects. In addition to these were names, initials, aphorisms and rural scenes. There was also introduced an ornate border, single and double, which gradually increased in size until it became entirely disproportionate to the work it encircled. The old patterns, which were wrought to be of service, that is, to be utilised as samplers, giving the word its real signification, were replaced by a meaningless type, which lasted to the nineteenth century and was covered with more or less inartistic designs, usually evolved from the whim or fancy of a child, or the inner consciousness of an instructress. They appeal to us, not as examples of needlework, but as records of laborious work and bygone days. The Essex worthy, Mrs. Gilbert, formerly Ann Taylor (1782-1866), gives us a hint of this in her 'Saturday Morning':

> There stands the old arm chair in chimney nook,
> The oaken table there in glory stands;
> On decent shelf, good tract and Holy Book,
> And, framed in marking stitch, some poet's lines.

As the eye lingers on these old pictures of needlework, some in good preservation, others faded and moth-eaten, the mind endeavours to recreate the personality of the worker and her environment. Let us give full play to our imagination and dream of the busy touch of a vanished hand, even though we may fail to call up the features and the garb of the figure who stitched, patiently if laboriously, at the canvas.

A LIEUTENANCY BOOK* FOR ESSEX.

1608 TO 1631, AND 1637 TO 1639.

BY REV. ANDREW CLARK, LL.D.

THIS great folio MS., of unique interest for Essex, came recently into the hands of the Oxford Regius Professor of Modern History, Dr. C. H. Firth, and he, with the generosity

*I have made a full analysis of it, describing every paper, and have condensed much of this into the present and other papers for the *Review*, but at least three sections of it would be extremely valuable, and might well be printed in full, if the means were forthcoming. While it remains in my custody, I shall be glad to show it to any county antiquary or interested person.

characteristic of himself personally, and of his office traditionally, has entrusted it to me to describe, and make the utmost use of, for the benefit of county history.

The nominal administrative head of the county, for many purposes, was the Lord-Lieutenant, *i.e.* (during the earlier part of this period), Robert Ratcliffe, fifth Earl of Sussex. He had a Court office, which kept him frequently in attendance on the King; and lived generally in London. His Lieutenancy duties thus devolved on his Deputies, or, rather, on the senior Deputy-Lieutenant for the time being. These were Sir Francis Barrington, 1608 to about 1625; William, Lord Maynard, of Easton Lodge, from about 1625 till his resignation in October 1628; after which it is difficult to trace the master-mind. It seems to have been the practice of the acting Deputy-Lieutenant, for his own guidance and justification, to cause to be filed, in the office of the Clerk of the Peace at Chelmsford (Mr. John Man seems to hold the office at this time), all orders addressed to him by the King, by the Privy Council, or other superior authority, whether received mediately through the Lord-Lientenant or directly from the superior authority. With each order were placed copies of the notices or directions issued, by reason of it, by the Deputy-Lieutenants, to officers of the militia, to chief magistrates of Essex boroughs, to justices of the peace, to high constables of hundreds, etc.; as also copies of the replies sent to the Lord-Lieutenant, to the Privy Council, to the Board of Green Cloth, etc.; and, occasionally, copies of the official reports on which these replies were framed. From time to time, also, on the definite conclusion or the muddled ending of a particular piece of business, the Deputy-Lieutenant caused a pithy 'memorandum' or endorsement to be made, giving his judgment on the whole affair.

At first these files were in constant use. We find, in the official letters of the Deputy-Lieutenants, frequent references to orders of a given date received from superiors or directions of a given date issued to inferiors. These references are sometimes to letters or orders issued some years back. After an interval of years, however, the stay-laces of the files would not only have strung on them an immense number of papers, but these papers would be mainly out of date and little likely to be called for. At the same time, 'precedent' was the fetish of English adminis-

tration, and past history had taught local authority to be ready with precedents against encroachments of crown officials. Accordingly, instead of destroying the antiquated files straight off, the particular Deputy-Lieutenant who was chiefly interested in the business that had been transacted during the period seems to have instructed his clerk to copy out into a great folio volume the set of papers about to be burnt. This casual treatment of the papers involved many errors ; important papers were lost ; papers got into wrong order ; dates were forgotten, when not distinctly written in the originals ; papers were frayed, and so partly illegible when they came to be transcribed.

Along with these Deputy-Lieutenancy papers, the more unusual orders directed to the Justices of the Peace were filed in the same way, and many of them brought into the same volume with the strictly Lieutenancy papers.

There are allusions which establish the existence of quite a series of volumes so compiled and transcribed. William, Lord Maynard, who withdrew from the Deputy-Lieutenancy in October 1628, lent his ' book of Lieutenancy ' to Sir Henry Mildmay, of Grace's, Deputy-Lieutenant, who returned it, January 24, 1629, with hearty thanks for the loan. This was, therefore, not a MS. belonging to the office, but a private register of official acts. In April 1627, when the Privy Council scolded the Essex Justices of the Peace for allowing the Grand Jury at the Sessions to reject the king's demand for ship money, the Justices sent a deputation to London, ' and made it appeare unto them by showing unto them the former *Booke of Presidentes* [*i.e.*, precedents] ' that they had proceeded exactly as they had done in 1596. This book would, therefore, be a Lieutenancy Book of the same sort containing a record of proceedings in the latter end of Elizabeth's reign.

These features have been dwelt upon, because they explain how a noble set of books of record, which would have been invaluable for county history, has disappeared. Although containing the record of official acts of the Deputy-Lieutenants and the Justices, the volumes were compiled at the charge of, and for the use of, individuals ; remained their property ; and have disappeared, or perished, with their other private papers.

From these general considerations we pass to a description of the one volume of the set which has survived and is accessible

to the student. It is a plain, workmanlike folio, containing over 370 leaves of good paper, of 14in. by 8¾in., in its original white vellum binding, with a flap going over the front of the volume, and fastened by thongs to the upper board. The water-mark, 2¼in. by 1¾in. at the widest part, is of an interesting heraldic type, representing a fleur-de-lis set on a coronet, which rests on an escutcheon (shewing a fesse between 3 somethings, impaling a field divided by a cross and a saltire) standing on a Maltese cross set on a scroll with the paper-maker's name. The only mark of provenance is the heraldic bookplate, within cover, of John Gurdon Rebow, viz. gules, 2 bows saltire-wise between 4 roundels,each bearing a fleur-de-lis ; crest, a bird with outstretched wings, transfixed by an arrow, issuing from a mural crown ; quartering, azure, three leopard's faces jessant de lys ; crest, an antelope climbing a rock. The motto is *In arduis viget virtus.* The Rebows were a Colchester family. Some twenty leaves at the beginning were left blank, so that if a hasty owner desired a scrap of paper for a pipe-light or a note, he might supply himself (as he has done) without mutilating the record. The volume was then paged from page 1 to page 627, leaving over 40 leaves at the end untouched. The first 12 pages were filled by lists of hundreds and parishes in Essex and a state of the trained-bands in England and Wales, placed here for facility of reference. The real beginning of the volume is on page 13, which commences with the date and title :—

'Essex, 23th [*i.e.*, three and twentieth] May 1608. A Booke of Lieutenancie, wherein is entred all letters directed to the Lord Lieutenant of the County of Essex concerninge musters or levyinge of forces, with all such proceedinges as have beene done and executed upon the said letters by his Deputy Lieutenants.' It was at first intended to keep this part of the volume specially for military records, and a second section was begun, without title, on page 543, for documents concerned with civil government. The copyist followed this plan till 1625. Then he included in his first section all papers whatever ; and in 1631, a year in which the documents are in unusually confused sequence, he reached the page where he had begun the second section. He then omitted all documents belonging to the years 1632 to 1636, and resumed, in the next page after the unfinished second section, by transcribing a document of 1637, concluding

this work with papers of 1638 and 1639. It is plain from the writing and the ink, as from other circumstances, that the letters, etc., were not posted into this volume as received, but that the whole volume was written continuously. We may safely fix the bulk of this transcribing in 1639, because in several places, as, *e.g.*, in 1625 and in 1631, the copyist has, by a natural mistake, substituted 1639, the year in which he was writing, for the date of the letter he copied.

The following is a summary of the varied contents of this important MS :—

I. 1608-24, pp. 21-111, injunctions, correspondence, returns about the County Trained Bands and the County Arsenal of Munitions. A paper giving the substance of this section of the MS. appeared in this *Review* for April in the present year.

II. 1626-38, scattered throughout the latter part of the volume, similar documents connected with the Trained Bands and the Arsenal in those years. These papers are not so interesting as those in the first section. The returns which gave muster places, strength of companies, names of officers, are left out. The documents which are now copied are long papers of injunction from the King and privy council, trying to enforce better and more frequent drill, better weapons, increase of numbers, equipment for field service.

It may be noted that Mr. Walter Rye possesses a MS. Book of Lieutenancy for Norfolk, 1626-37, which he printed for the Norfolk and Norwich Archæological Society in 1907. In this several of these later ordinances on this and other subjects may be found. In my opinion, however, the Essex MS. has preserved, on the whole, the better text.

III. A very large part of the volume is occupied by collections of papers relating to impressment of men for service over sea. Curious details are given as to their equipment, their allowances, their march from the town where they were taken charge of by 'conductors' to the port of embarkation. The county was called on to raise at once the whole money required for impressing, clothing, conducting, and paying the impressed men ; and might hope, if lucky, to get back a portion of the outlay after contending for months with the chicanery of the exchequer.

In 1608 15 pikemen, 30 caliver men, and 5 musketeers were

pressed in the county, and marched from Chelmsford to Chester to reinforce the troops in Ireland (pp. 13—21).

In Jan. 1623 the Essex authorities were charged with despatching from Harwich to their homes the survivors of Sir Horace Vere's Palatinate troops (p. 589).

In 1624 orders went forth for 14,000 men to be impressed for Count Mansfield's futile expedition to the Palatinate, of which the Essex contingent was 700, immediately raised to 750 to make up for desertions. Sir Charles Rich was one of the captains under whom the Essex men marched in December from Chelmsford to Dover. At Dover desertions were so frequent that in January 1625 Essex had to impress 200 more men to fill up the gaps. The Essex trained bands had to be called out to restrain the excesses of contingents from Suffolk, etc., on their way through the county (pp. 112-123).

In May 1625 Essex had to press 400 men to be marched to Plymouth (pp. 124-133). These afterwards took part in the wretched expedition to Cadiz, and the county spent months in agitation before it recovered, in 1627, any part of its outlay (pp. 274-283).

In 1625, during a panic which arose on the possibility of Spain trying a counter stroke to the muster at Plymouth by throwing a force from Dunquerque on to the unprotected coast of Essex, the larger part of the County Trained Bands were called out, and kept in camp at Harwich, 4 Sept.—5 Oct. The Privy Council promised most faithfully to pay the expenses of this service (pp. 140—196), but, after striving for payment till March 1627, the county had to write off the whole sum as a bad debt. The 'peremptoriness' of Devereux Talkerne, sergeant-major to Lord Warwick's regiment at Harwich, led to an action of assault and battery (pp. 267—270). This whole section of the MS. ought to be printed in full. It forms a story of great interest, with surprising developments, and a most tragi-farcical conclusion. The smartness and efficiency of the Deputy-Lieutenants stand out in singular contrast to the arrogance and helplessness of the central government.

In 1626, Lord Warwick was allowed to proceed with the defence of the great harbour by works at Landguard Point on the Suffolk naze, and at Harwich, which had been planned when the troops were in camp there (pp. 203-205). When he threw

up his command, he obtained the appointment of a special commission (Viscount Colchester, Lord Maynard, Sir Henry Carey) to audit his accounts, and they wrote out an exact description of the condition of the fortifications (pp. 251-256) in October 1626. A garrison was needed for the works. It was at first proposed to billet the Earl of Essex's regiment of foot (January 1626) in the Essex maritime towns, but this idea was dropped (March 1626) because the county would supply no money. Meanwhile, Brightlingsea had pleaded its membership of the Cinque Ports as a protection against having a company of 100 foot quartered there (pp. 205-210). At last, in 1627, after much bickering between the Privy Council, the Deputy Lieutenants, the Mayor of Harwich, and Captain Robert Gosnold (the commandant of the forts), it was arranged that 50 king's soldiers should hold the works at Landguard Point, and that 50 of the Essex trained-band, living nearest Harwich, should be exempted from ordinary service on condition of hastening to man the Harwich fort on any sudden alarm (pp. 418-422).

In February 1627, the King resolved to reinforce the English regiments in the Low Countries, and send them to help the King of Denmark, now hard pressed by the Romanist powers. Essex was to contribute 100 men to the force to be mustered at Harwich on 21st March, and taken by Sir Richard Saltonstall to Stade to be placed under stout-hearted Sir Charles Morgan (pp. 322-364). At Harwich there took place an extraordinary series of desertions and mutinies. Essex was deeply grieved at having to make up, by a new press, the vacancies caused by the unfitness and by the desertion of men supplied by other counties, especially Leicester and Cambridgeshire. This whole section of the MS. ought to be printed. It is a story of truly astonishing occurrences, quaintly told by the actors in them, which all took place in the limits of this county.

In September 1627, Essex was called on to impress 100 men to be marched to Plymouth, and to raise £200, for the new expedition to La Rochelle (pp. 409-415). A glowing official account of successes at the Isle of Rhé, June 27 to July 17, 1627, was published in Essex, possibly to abate the demand for repayment of money laid out on the pressed men (pp. 393-6). In December 1627 it was officially admitted that the defeated army was back

at Plymouth (p. 426), starving and mutinous. In the first quarter of 1628 Essex had the misfortune to provide quarters for Sir Pierce Crosbie's regiment of Irish foot, allowed only sixpence a day per man for all expenses, and that sixpence not regularly paid (pp. 428-451, 454-8, 471-3). There was a fierce Donnybrook at Witham on St. Patrick's Day, March 17, 1628, between the soldiers, incensed at an insult to their national flag (argent, a saltire gules), and the rustics, maddened because Irish papist soldiers had fired on and wounded peaceable English protestants. This section of the MS. ought to be printed in full, as a story of strange events transacted on Essex soil, racily told.

In 1639, Essex had to send out from Harwich 1,100 of the trained bands, and 400 pressed men, with 21 halberts (for serjeants) and 21 drummers, for the expedition intended to reduce Scotland into obedience to the Bishops (pp. 604-623). The scrap-iron condition of the arms as unshipped at Harwich, along with a glowing official announcement of the success of the expedition, is particularly amusing.

There is occasionally a strong note of comedy in these professedly grave records. One evening early in September 1628, a poor fisherman, condition as to sobriety not stated, took fright 'upon the meetinge of a smale shippe going towards London,' surely no unusual circumstance. He rowed hastily ashore, and soon, through the night, mounted men were spurring to London and to Chelmsford with the tidings that 6,000 men from Flanders had landed near Leigh; and Sir Henry Mildmay, of Grace's, and Sir Henry Mildmay, of Moulsham, had drums beat and trained men mustered to march to meet the invaders (p. 474).

IV. Another interesting, but smaller, portion of the military notes has reference to grants of leave to foreign potentates to beat drums for volunteers from England. In such cases the King asks the county authorities (*a*) to give the appointed officers free leave to ask for volunteers; (*b*) whenever a man has volunteered, to keep him to his bargain by imprisonment, if needed, as severely as if he had been pressed in the king's own service.

In November 1609, transports with Irish troops intended for the service of the King of Sweden, windbound at Gravesend, were threatened with pestilence. It was an intense relief to

Essex when they were landed to recruit their health in Kent, and not on the northern shore of the estuary (pp. 27-8).

In March 1612, the King of Denmark was accorded all facilities to enlist volunteers to serve under Lord Willoughby (pp. 34-5).

In June 1624 the Dutch were empowered to ask Essex to contribute to the 6,000 volunteers whom they proposed to enroll under the Earls of Oxford and Essex and other English colonels (pp. 107-8).

In June 1631 the Marquis of Hamilton had leave to call for Essex volunteers to enlist in the force of 6,000 he was raising for service under the King of Sweden (pp. 518-9).

V. The navy occupies less space than might have been expected in the records of a maritime county. Setting aside the ship-money notices, which belong properly to taxation, we have only these points following. The Commissioners of the Navy bought timber for ship-building in Essex. For the conveyance of this timber from the wood where it was felled to the nearest point of the waterside, whence it could be taken by barges to the dockyards at Chatham, Deptford, and Woolwich, they had to invoke the assistance of the Justices of the Peace. They paid for this 'land-transport' at an ancient, obsolete, and altogether inadequate rate. The Justices of the Peace had either to commandeer teams in their district to do the work at inadequate pay on pain of imprisonment, or else to make a rate in the district to pay the difference between 'the king's price' and current charges. Essex Justices of the Peace are praised by the Commissioners as deserving well of the country by their pains in this service. The dates and places mentioned are 1612 (p. 580); 1620 (pp. 566, 576), Navestock and Nazing; 1622 (p. 584); 1623 (p. 590), Braxsted. Unlike the land forces, which left their press to the County authorities, the Navy conducted its press by its own officers, only asking that the Justices of the Peace should give facilities for it. In March 1627, the Commissioners of the Navy sent 'press-masters' to lay hold of 150 seamen in Essex, but, in consequence of extensive desertions, had to ask the county constables to try to recover their men for them, by hook or by crook (pp. 309-10). In Sept. 1639, Algernon Percy, Earl of Northumberland, Lord High Admiral of England, began a great press in his lordly Lord

High Admiral's way, but he was unable to keep his pressed men on board his ships, and was forced to beg the petty constables of Essex to use every trick they could to bring together his fugitives (pp. 624-7).

The notices which belong to civil, as distinct from military, affairs are naturally less frequent, but they are both varied and valuable. I therefore go on with my numbered paragraphs.

VI. A large space in the MS. is devoted to the questions of purveyance and cart-taking. 'Purveyance' meant the claim of the king's 'purveyor' to commandeer provisions for man and forage for beast at an obsolete and insufficient rate, on the plea that the provisions were required for the table of the King and his retinue, and the forage for their horses. 'Cart-taking' meant a similar claim of the King and his retinue to commandeer waggons for transport on any journey the King chose to take, at similarly inadequate pay. This is admittedly not only an important, but a knotty, question in English history. The papers in this MS. connected with it extend from 1592 to 1631. They are of so great importance as to deserve separate and minute attention, due both to their historical importance and their own interest. It will be enough here to point out that in 1623 the Crown officials enticed Essex into a yearly payment of £3,000 for 'the abolishing of all purveyance and cart-taking for ever,' and that in 1631 the county had just cause to complain that, besides that yearly payment, it was saddled with newly imposed and odious charges to his majesty's hounds, and hawks, and huntsmen.

VII. Industrial Essex is not passed over in these records, but it is noticed only because on occasion its cry of distress made itself heard.

In 1623 complaint is made that there is no market for Essex cloth (p. 589).

In the same year the Privy Council takes notice of a complaint that the citizens of Norwich refuse to allow the woollen fabrics of Essex access to their market. The Privy Council offers to adjudicate. No result stated (p. 592).

In 1629 there was a complete breakdown in the Essex woollen trade (pp. 482-512), mainly due to the king's foolish personal quarrel with Spain, up to then our best market for Essex 'bays.' This is another section of Dr. Firth's MS. which

ought to be printed in full. There is an exact statement of the number of employees in the woollen trade in Essex towns, and of the weekly output, when trade was brisk. As a result of the weavers' trouble, there was a corn-riot at Burrow-hills, near Maldon, for which four persons were hanged (pp. 527, 533).

VIII. This head is a longish one in the MS., but may be a short one in the description of the MS. It describes the contemptible appeals for money made by James I. and Charles I., requests for benevolences, complaints that subsidy returns are shrinking, privy seals asking loans, demands for 'free gifts,' commissions to inflict 'knighthood' fines, forced loans, winding up with the claim for 'ship-money' (£6,057 from Essex, pp. 451-4). Here also comes an application, made in April 1620, that Essex would join with London in floating a loan on behalf of the Elector Palatine, the King's son-in-law.

IX. Another unpleasant head for the historian exhibits the harshness of James I. and Charles I. to their Romanist subjects. In 1612 (p. 580) complaint is made that Romanists are on the increase; in 1613 (pp. 551, 553)), the county authorities are asked to lay hands on arms in Romanist possession; in Sept. 1614 (p. 555), a further search is ordered for arms that may have been acquired since. In Oct. 1625 besides authority to deal with Romanist commoners, Lord Warwick had special orders to disarm Romanist peers (pp. 197-201). Lord Morley had no armoury. The arms at Viscount Colchester's were removed to Sir Harbottle Grimston's; and those at Lord Petre's to Leez Priory.

X. There are a few agricultural notes. In January 1620 it is said that the low price obtainable for grain, owing to a succession of abundant harvests, is ruining farmers (p. 562). In 1622 the Privy Council tries to alleviate the distress caused by scarcity and high prices (pp. 576, 585, 588). In December 1630, and in April 1631 there is again scarcity, and consequently high prices (pp. 525-532, 540).

XI. Essex roads came in for much abuse, because the King had occasion to pass over them. In the autumn of 1621 (pp. 573, 575), the King's surveyor of the highways ordered immediate and effective repairs to roads about Ilford, Wanstead, Romford, Woodford Bridge, Havering, Abridge, and Waltham Abbey, that His Majesty might pass to Theobald's without

being in a passion all the way. Bow-bridge was in such disrepair that the king 'was unwillinge to goe over itt, and alsoe he was angry that it was soe badd.' In 1622 the Duke of Buckingham writes (p. 585) asking the Judges of Assize to move the local authorities to action: 'I am a witnesse my selfe how badd the wayes are.' In 1627 an amusing deadlock occurred (p. 374). The county had issued precepts for £400 to repair the road from Chelmsford to London, and the collection of the rate was entrusted to Ambrose Aylett, of Chelmsford. Aylett was one of the seven Chelmsford men who were haled to London and there imprisoned for refusing to contribute to the forced loan. Aylett declined to allow his papers to be gone through in his absence, for the purpose of getting at the county returns, and the county petitioned the Chancellor of the Exchequer to release Aylett, even for a few days, that they might learn how far they had got in collecting the rate. In 1633 (p. 591) there are renewed complaints that Essex highways are as bad as ever.

XII. From time to time the Privy Council or other authority complains that Essex is swarming with vagrants, who rob and steal and are a terror to the country. It is so in 1612 (p. 550), in 1615 (pp. 557, 559), in 1621 (p. 572), in 1622 (p. 585), in 1628 (p. 462). The complaint is generally accompanied with a demand that the county should appoint a permanent Provost Marshall. The Deputy-Lieutenants always return a soft answer, deprecating the expense of such an establishment, and saying that they have issued strict orders in the matter to the constables throughout the shire. It is plain that they had no mind to come under the jurisdiction of an officer with ill-defined and arbitrary powers. The beginning of one Lord-Keeper's mandate to compel beggars to work seems at first sight extraordinary:—

'Considering that Almightie God, when he had but two in all the world to serve him, planted them a garden to keepe them from Idlenesse; and havinge afterwards appropriated unto him selfe a whole Common Wealth, did enact that law (in the 15th of Deutrynomie: *Mendicus non erit inter vos*) against begginge and lazinesse,'

but the sermonic tone is explained by the fact that the seal was then held by a bishop (Williams, of Lincoln).

XIII. A few casual references describe change as to the county officials. May 1625, it is noted (p. 133) that a new

commission of Lieutenancy issued to the Earl of Sussex gave him for the first time authority to name his Deputy Lieutenants. In all former commissions (the Earl of Leicester, the Lord Treasurer Burleigh, the Earl of Sussex) these had been named by the Crown. In September 1625 (p. 154) the Earl of Warwick was associated with Sussex in the Lord Lieutenancy, but in September 1626 (p. 247) Sussex was again made sole Lord Lieutenant. In 1639 the King issues a peremptory letter (p. 618) requiring the Deputy Lieutenants to be continuously resident in the county, and also the Lord Lieutenant, unless employed outside its limits on the King's service.

XIV. Some other matters may be brought together in sequence, though they have no real connection.

In Dec. 1609 the Privy Council complained (pp. 545-8) that Proclamations issued by King and Council were generally treated as waste paper, and that in many parts of the county the officials did not even nail them up.

In Nov. 1612 the Justices of Assize complained (p. 550) that 'the multitude of Alehouses, beinge the receivers and mainteyners of the worser sort of people, and the very bane of the Common Wealth' is very great.

In 1620 a project was stirred to restrict the number of breweries, and have only a few places licensed for that purpose (p. 567).

Stringent orders issued July 1625, in view of the plague in London, were recalled in August, because the Lord Mayor found that they stayed the influx of provisions (pp. 138-139).

In 1627 proposals that the county should buy Colchester Castle from the King came to nothing (pp. 375-8).

In 1637 a complaint that King's briefs for collections to defray losses by fire, etc., were greatly abused (p. 594), elicited a series of stringent rules to be enforced on applicants, and the remarkable admissions that 'counterfeit briefes' abounded, and that a far greater number of collections was yearly 'pressed upon the countrie' than the law had sanctioned, but no promise of enquiry in the Crown Office where these abuses originated.

MET. BOROUGH PUBLIC LIBRARIES POPLAR

NOTES OF THE QUARTER.

Churches, Chapels, etc.

DOVERCOURT.—The foundation stones of a new Congregational Church in Cliff Road were laid on April 29, the Rev. G. E. Monson, Chairman of the Essex Congregational Union, presiding over the gathering.

CHELMSFORD.—The jubilee of the Baddow Road Congregational Chapel was held on April 29, when an interesting account was given by Mr. Nurse, the secretary, of the beginning of free church life in the town. A piece of land and a barn, called the Frameyard, sold to Thomas Barnard in 1577, seems to have been the site where the first services were held long before 1719 the barn had been converted into a meeting house. On April 2 of that year, the building and the land were bought as a place of public worship by Rev. Nathan Heckford, and in 1736 a new building was erected. Legacies were received as follows

1722—rent charge of £2 on a field and ozier ground, copyhold of manor of Bishops Hall, by Mary Bevill, milliner, to Nathan Heckford, on condition he did not refuse it.

1725—£2 a year charged on his shop by William James, of Moulsham.

1727—the White Hart, Springfield, and three fields by John Thorne to the minister of the church; this inn was sold in 1877, and a new manse for the minister erected in New London Road.

1733—£50 for six poor widows of the congregation left by Sarah Wright.

The Rev. George Martin gave some interesting reminiscences of his first connection with the church in 1852, when he came fresh from college as a supply for one night. Two years later he settled as pastor, and he described with some humour the tuning of the fiddles in church, the objections to his wearing a silk gown given him by friends, and the congregation turning their backs on him when he said, 'Let us pray.' When the old meeting house was pulled down to build the present chapel in 1858, some oak timber of the old barn was found embedded in the chapel wall. The works foreman made of them an inkstand, which he still has.

BOWERS GIFFORD.—The new mission church and hall were dedicated on May 13 by the Bishop of Barking, who preached the sermon. At the evening service the rector of Stanford-le-Hope, Rev. James Russell, M.A., was the preacher. The building was designed by Mr. E. Sedding, F.R.I.B.A., and is of timber and red tiles.

East Horndon.—The ancient parish church of All Saints, which has been closed for about ten years on account of its dilapidated condition, was re-opened on May 13 by the Bishop of Barking. The extensive restorations necessary have had to wait the accumulation of funds, but are now completed and are nearly paid for. The foundations needed under-pinning, the roof required much attention. The heavy gallery has been removed and the much older and very interesting priests' chambers which have been brought to light, with their approach to the rood loft, are utilised for seating. The fine incised slab to Lady Tyrrell, dated 1422, has been made an altar stone; the monument to Sir Thomas Tyrell, 1450, has been raised on a new plinth. The ancient font, holy water stoup, sundial, and grilled door have all received attention. The tower has been repaired and a vestry constructed in it. The church dates from the time of Henry VI., and is built on the site of an earlier one. It is embattled and embrasured, standing amid a belt of trees on the edge of a steep hill, commanding fine views over the Thames and the Kentish hills. The Bishop, in his eloquent sermon, dwelt on the pleasure of carefully and accurately restoring ancient buildings such as this.

Obituaries

The Rev. Robert Henry Eustace, who had been 55 years vicar of Great Sampford with Hempsted, died at his residence, Great Sampford Grange, on March 28 last at the age of 81 years. He graduated B.A. 1848, and was ordained priest from St. Peter's College, Cambridge, in 1850; he came that year to Sampford, and resigned the living in 1905. From 1870-94 he was Rural Dean of Sampford, and long a familiar and worthy figure in North Essex.

Mr. Frederick Wells, of Oaklands, Chelmsford, died on May 20, in his 82nd year, after a short illness. He was a prominent Nonconformist, a zealous philanthropist, and had been senior deacon of the London Road Congregational Church and superintendent of its Sunday School for nearly 50 years. Third son of William Collings Wells, he was educated at Mr. Morrell's school at Little Baddow, and at Mill Hill, and went into Messrs. Wells and Perry's brewery as soon as he left. His business capacity was great, and applied to many things outside his own affairs. He was a guardian for 50 years, and hon. treasurer

of the Infirmary and dispensary at Chelmsford nearly as long. He was a liberal supporter of many good works, but his modesty and lack of self-assertion were conspicuous. Twice married, he leaves a family of five sons and three daughters.

Bernard Henry Philip, 14th Baron Petre, died on June 16 at Thorndon Hall, Brentwood, where he had been lying seriously ill since the beginning of the month. Second son of the 12th Baron by his wife Mary Teresa, eldest daughter of Hon. Charles T. Clifford, of Irnham Hall, Lincolnshire, he was born May 31, 1858, and was therefore 50 years of age. He succeeded his brother in 1893, and married in 1899. He leaves one daughter, and is succeeded in the barony by his younger brother, Philip Benedict Joseph, born in 1864, married 1888 to Julia May, daughter of George Cavendish Taylor. His son Lionel George Caroll, born 1890, now becomes heir to the barony.

NOTES AND QUERIES.

Dedham Registers (*E.R.*, xvii. p. 55).—These registers do not, as suggested here, appear in Canon Tancock's valuable series of articles on Essex Registers (*E.R.*, vols. vii. to x.). The Archdeaconry of Essex was completed by him, but not the Archdeaconry of Colchester. His account of them in the Rev. C. A. Jones' *History of Dedham*, App. I., is, therefore, a fresh and valuable addition to the articles already printed in our pages.

Anthony James, an Essex Yeoman, ob. 1602.—Is it possible to identify this man and the place where he lived ? All the facts at present known are : that he was an Essex yeoman, living in the Devonshey (Dengie ?) Hundred, who appears to have possessed considerable wealth for a person in his position This seems to have excited the cupidity of a band of nine robbers, who seized the opportunity, when all the farm servants were absent at a fair, to break in and murder him and his wife and carry off their two children, one of whom, a boy, they afterwards killed, and cut the tongue out of the other, a girl. The story of her marvellous recovery of speech, and the consequent capture and execution of her brother's murderers (the band apparently escaped) are all set forth in a pamphlet entitled '*The Horrible Murther of a Young Boy of*

three years of age, whose Sister had her tongue cut out: and how it pleased God to reveale the offenders by giving speech to the tongueless child. Which offenders were executed at Hartford, the 4th of August, 1606. Printed by Ed. Allde for William Firebrand, and are to be solde at his shop in the Pope's Head Alley, over against the taverne door. 1606. 4to.'

W. B. Gerish, Bishops Stortford.

Notes from Dr. Firth's MS.—Some scattered notes from this MS. may be brought together as supplying additional information on matters relating to Essex which have already been discussed in this *Review*, e.g., *Breaches in the Sea-Wall*. Commissioners of the subsidy, writing from Braintree, 5 Oct. 1625, inform the Lord Keeper that the amount collected for the subsidy will, for various reasons, be smaller than usual. One reason is:—'It pleased God this last springe to send such a breach and inundation upon the richest partes of this Countie which lyeth upon the sea-coast and the ryver of Thames as the losse amounted unto some private men to the value of one thousand pounds' [*i.e.* a-piece]. On 16 February 1827-8, the Deputy-Lieutenants implore the Privy Council to show 'love and care towards our poore countrie which by the losse of nere fortie thousand pounds in the sea walls within late yeares, and the decay of rents generally is much impoverished.'

Coast-defence:—Reporting, from Harwich, 18 Sept. 1625, as to the defenceless state of the Essex coast, the Earl of Warwick informs the Privy Council:—'There is yet a third place which stands upon the Hand of Mersie in this countie, where was wont to bee a blockhouse, which is thought verie fitt to be newlie built.' It would appear that the blockhouse had been built in Elizabeth's reign, and suffered to go to ruin in James I.'s time. At any rate, in the same report, Warwick states that the fortifications at Harwich are 'utterly ruined' by the fault of Alderman Whitemor, who bought the manor of Harwich from James I.

Hop-cultivation:—The Commissioners of the subsidy, in the letter already cited, 5 Oct. 1625, say:—'The price of hoppes which was the chiefest commoditie which farmers have used to make mony of att this tyme of the yeare is now soe low for want of Vent [*i.e.* sale] either at Sturbridge faire [near Cambridge, held from 16th Sept. to 11th Oct.], or London [th]att

Hoppe-Masters are in greate distresse of monie to paie theire labourers for pickinge, dryinge, and keepinge of their groundes, which is not done without a greate charge.'—A. Clark, Gt. Leighs.

Reputed Roman Well at Earls Colne.—Just lately, when staying in Earls Colne, a friend showed me this relic. It is but a tank of similar character to that which supplies Rawdon House, at Hoddesdon, Herts., and used to supply the Priory at Colne; parts of the lead pipe are still extant. The sides, above the water-line, are built up of flint and tile walling of a comparatively recent date, and in the form of a curb, but the original enclosure of the water seems to have been formed of stone, probably of the same date as the Priory, a tiny piece of which still exists in a corner of the ground of the present building. The well is a mediæval survival, but apparently nothing more, and is fast becoming ruinous. It is just behind the buildings of the Tile Kiln farm. The well has no feature which can entitle it to be called Roman.—J. Allen Tregelles, Hoddesdon.

Rural Identities.—I asked an old rustic in my parish his age. 'I'm in my seventy-eight. I'm the same age as so-and-so, only he's older than me by May Fair to Harlow Town Fair. I asked for explanation. 'Why, you know what May Fair is—Chenshford Fair, 12th of May, and Harlow Town Fair is the 28th of November.' (Please observe the local 'Chenshford.' Camden, *Britannia*, 1600 edition notes Chensford as the local pronunciation).

Can any of your authorities explain the use of 'chase' and 'chaseway' for a road or lane leading to a farm or into fields? The *Oxford English Dictionary* seems to give no help, and Wright's *Dialect Dictionary* only refers it to a Norman-French dialect word *chasse, un petit chemin*, but gives no etymology. Is it possible that it is a form of causeway, locally carzy and carsy?—Edwd. Gepp, High Easter.

REVIEWS OF BOOKS.

Lays and Legends of the Forest of Essex. By Edward Hardingham. Pp. ix., 310, crown 8vo. London (J. Haslam), 1907. Price 2s. 6d. net.

The forewords of this book commence by describing Essex as 'perhaps the least known, but the best abused of English

counties,' but they go on to controvert and correct that mistaken idea very prettily and very justly.

These lays and legends of the once great Forest of Essex are certainly suggestive of the history of that interesting district 'all within a score of miles—I had almost said within sight—of Paul's tall dome,' quite apart from their pleasing poetical setting.

Including the prologue, there are seventeen distinct poems, bearing such titles as 'The Demon Stag; a legend of Nazing.' 'Kate of the Hollow; a legend of Loughton.' 'Hugh of Essex; a legend of Clavering.' 'St. Mark's Eve; a legend of Coopersale.' 'Ada of Enever; a legend of Monks Wood.' 'Agnes Leigh; a legend of Chingford.' To each there is a very well written little historical preface, running to five or six pages, in which the modern church restorations and forest enclosures are both commendably condemned. 'Agnes Leigh, a legend of Chingford,' is the last and longest in the book, occupying more than half the pages (pp. 138-310) in it. It is a story of the later days of Queen Mary, and is replete with many soft and stirring incidents, with descriptive passages of Essex scenery, in which familiar Essex names are skilfully introduced, as well as many pleasant songs.

A perusal of this volume should bring pleasure to many Essex folk, as well as to the thousands of Londoners who make our Essex forest their playground. It is dedicated to the Lord Mayor of London.

The Cathedral Church and See of Essex. With 13 illustrations and two plans. By the Rev. J. Charles Cox, LL.D., F.S.A. London, Bemrose and Sons, Ltd., 1908. Pp. xii., 80. 8vo. paper cover. Price 1s. 6d.

This little book contains not only an excellent history of the parish church of Chelmsford, now about to become the cathedral, but also a highly interesting account of the planting of Christianity in the kingdom of Essex, and of its first bishop, Cedd, his minster of St. Peter-at-the-Wall, and his spiritual rule at Ythancester and Tilbury. The story of Bishop Simon Sudbury's very active episcopate (1362-1375), when Bishop's Hall was a residence of the bishops of London, is both fresh and valuable. Dr. Cox is indeed well qualified by his general ecclesiastical knowledge for the task. Nevertheless, it would have been well if the proofs had been read by some one knowing the county, when some errors would have been avoided,

among which are the following :—*Walton* Abbey, Rumford, Battiswick, Woodhead for Woodford, Great Bardsfield, Great Beddow, Peter and Tirrell for Petre and Tyrrell, Dunmore (in the index), and Mailman. Dr. Cox quotes on p. 45 from an 'inferior history of the county by Mr. P. Muilman,' and again on p. 54, from 'The Gentleman's History of Essex,' without apparently being aware that they are the same. The Colchester martyr was William Chieveling, not Chierelynge. 'Gynge Mounteny,' is not Chignal, but Mountnessing, while Gynge ad Petram and Ginge Regine are, we believe, Ingatestone and Margaretting. The account of Chelmsford Grammar School is taken from Miss C. Fell Smith's article on schools in *Vict. Hist.*, vol. ii., but the salary of the master, Peter Wyleigh, in 1548, was £9 12 yearly, not as given on p. 39. The book is dedicated to Dr. Laver.

Nothing but Rose Leaves Crumpled and Sear. London. Printed at the Chiswick Press, 1907. Pp. 54.

We have been favoured with the sight of this small privately printed collection of verses, the author of which is still of tender years, but if the promise shown in some of these little poems is ever perfected, we may expect to see from this younger member of the clever Page Wood family a worthy follower of ancestors distinguished alike in law, literature, soldiering, and philanthropy. The following little poem on a dawn shower, though the work of a child of twelve, is the real stuff of poetry, and we fancy Miss Christine M. G. Bradhurst, even when grown up, may single it out from the rest of the 'Rose Leaves' for recollection.

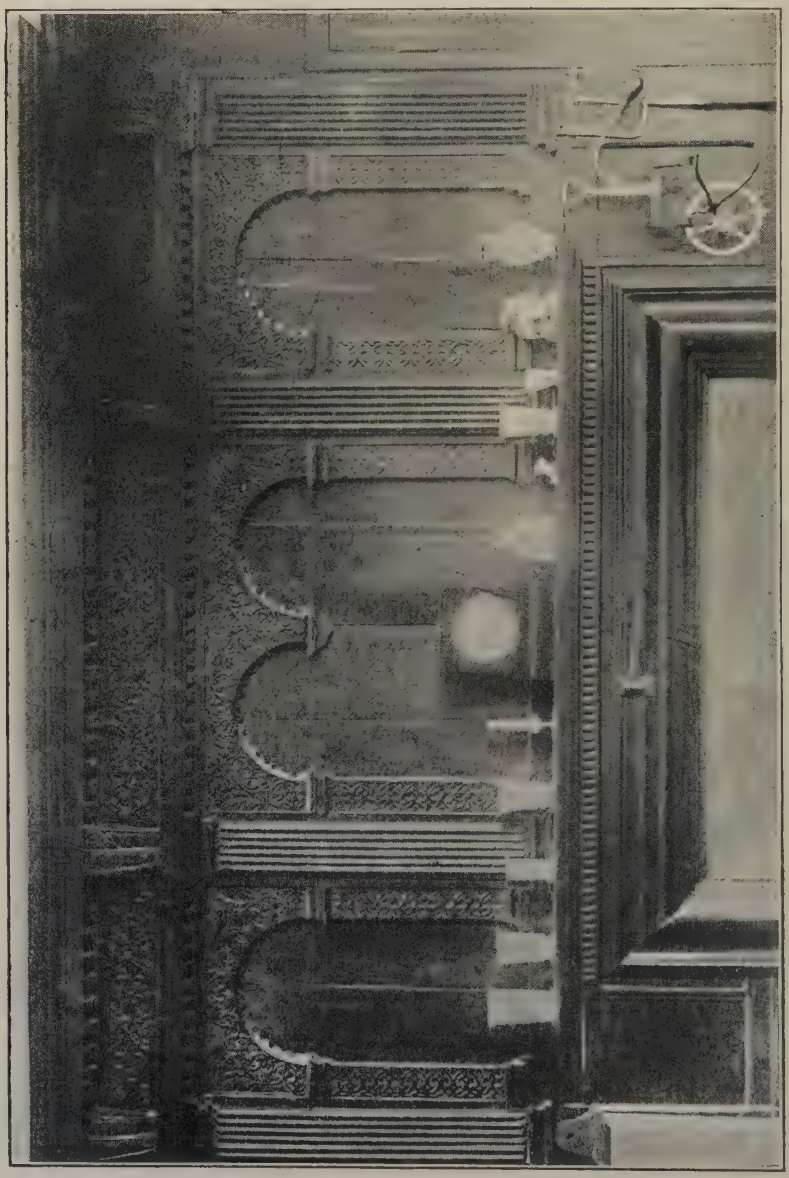
WHY IT RAINS.

The Sun is gone to rest,
A ball of fiery red,
Small cloudlets are his sheets,
The dark sky is his bed.

The Moon begins her reign,
With clear and steady light;
The World it sighs and sleeps,
'Mid stillness of the night.

The Moon's brief reign is done,
And dawn is come again,
The Queen of night must go,
She weeps and that is rain.

PUBLIC
LIBRARIES
LAR



OAK CARVED PANELLING IN AN OLD HOUSE AT CLAVERING.

THE

ESSEX REVIEW:

A Quarterly Journal for the County.

No. 68.] OCTOBER, 1908. VOL. XVII.

MET. BOROUGH OF POPLAR PUBLIC LIBRARIES

THE FLAIL.

BY H. W. LEWER.

THE word Flail is derived from the Latin *flagellum*, 'a scourge,' an etymology which becomes clearer in the West Germanic *flagil*, and the fifteenth century spelling *flayel*. It is defined in the Oxford *New English Dictionary* as 'an instrument for threshing corn by hand, consisting of a wooden staff or handle, at the end of which a stouter and shorter pole or club, called a swingle or swipple, is so hung as to swing freely.' The staff which the thresher holds is called the handstaff, and the club with which the grain is threshed is variously known as the swingle, swipple, souple, or supple, the two parts being connected by a thong of leather, or a rope of hemp or straw, in some districts known as the 'flail-hinging.'

In Dorset, Somerset, Devon, Cornwall, and other south-western counties of England, in Glamorganshire and Pembrokeshire, and in some Irish counties (as Wexford), the Flail is known as the drashel (the 'th' of 'thresh' becoming 'd'), the middle band or connecting-tie being, in Wexford, sometimes made of eelskin and sheepskin, and called the 'bunyane.' In Yorkshire, Nottinghamshire, and other English counties, the middle band or bind is occasionally styled the 'capel' or 'caplin.'

The Flail is mentioned by Anglo-Saxon and old English writers as early as A.D. 1100, and there is a reference to it in *Piers Plowman*, the well-known poem written by William Langland about 1360. Thomas Tusser, whom Robert Southey described as 'a good, honest, homely, useful old rhymer,' and who was born about 1524 at Rivenhall, near Witham, in Essex, published in 1557 his *Hundreth Good Pointes of Husbandrie*, which

in 1573 was enlarged to *Five Hundreth Pointes of Good Husbandry united to as many of Good Huswifery.* In this work he alludes to various farming tools, amongst them the flail, strawfork, and rake. In the *Third Part of King Henry VI.* (Act II., Sc. I.), William Shakespeare makes the Earl of Warwick liken the lack-fire play of his men in the fight at Saint Albans to that of an 'idle thresher with a flail.' John Milton's Goblin (*L'Allegro*), on the other hand, was a very different fellow for

> 'in one night, ere glimpse of morn,
> His shadowy flail hath threshed the corn,
> That ten day-labourers could not end.'

Robert Burns, however, was under no delusion as to the nature of a hard day's work with the flail, for in 'The Vision' he sings, in lines of simple beauty, to which the autobiographical touch lends human interest, of

> 'The thresher's weary flingin'-tree*
> The lee-lang† day had tired me;
> And whan the sun had clos'd his e'e
> Far i' the west,
> Ben i' the spence,‡ right pensivelie
> I gaed to rest.'

William Barnes, whose graphic poems of life and landscape in Dorset were published in 1879, makes one of his characters (Thomas, in the 'Two Faerms in Woone') speak with proper indignation of the passing of the flail, and the introduction of machinery:—

> "Why here wer fourteen men, some years agoo,
> A-kept a drashen half the winter drough;
> An' now, woone's drashels be'n't a bit o' good.
> They got machines to drashy wi', plague teäke 'em!
> An' he that vust vound out the way to meäke 'em
> I'd drash his busy sides vor'n if I could!
> Avore they took away our work, they ought
> To meake us up the bread our leäbour bought."

No explicit mention is made of the flail in the Bible, excepting a doubtful reference in Isaiah, ch. xxviii, verses 24-28 (Revised Version): "The fitches are not threshed with a sharp instrument, neither is a cartwheel turned upon the cummin, but the fitches are beaten out with a staff, and the cummin with a rod.' The fitch is the nutmeg flower (*Nigella Sativa*), a ranunculaceous plant cultivated in the East for its black seeds, which were valued in medicine and as a condiment. The cummin (*Cuminum*

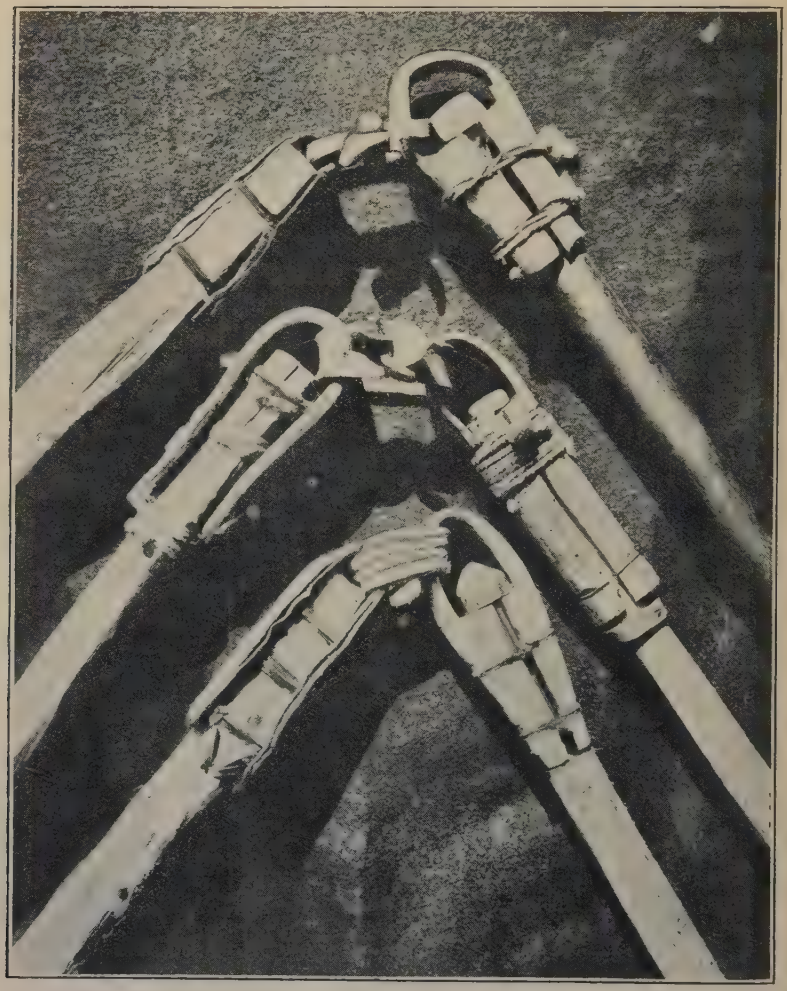
*Flail. †Livelong. ‡Within the parlour.

Cyminum) is an umbelliferous plant, which was also employed as a condiment, and in poultices, for which its carminative properties were highly esteemed. The Rev. Dr. John Kitto, commenting on the text, says that the Flail 'was confined among the ancient Hebrews to the threshing of the smaller grains, such as vetches, dill, or cummin, in which no operation upon the stalk was desired.' In those cases in which not only was the grain to be separared from the ear, but the straw was also to be treated so as to render it fit for fodder, the Jews used the threshing drag, or the wain or sledge, in addition to treading by cattle.

The Flail is still in service on the Continent, and, according to Dr. Thomas Moffatt Allison, of Newcastle-on-Tyne, who has written an interesting *brochure* on *The Flail and Its Varieties*, the Japanese employ the implement in beating out rice.

In rural England and Scotland, until the period of the repeal of the Corn Laws (1846), no sound was more familiar or common in the autumn and short days of winter than the thud of the Flail, vigorously wielded by the sturdy labourer as he threshed the corn garnered at the recent harvest. Professor Thorold Rogers (1823—1890), the greatest authority on the history of agriculture, writing in 1876, expressly stated that 'thirty years ago all corn or nearly all corn was threshed by the Flail.' In the present day it is difficult to realise that machinery for this purpose has not been longer in operation. There are well-authenticated instances of the use of the Flail in Lincolnshire in 1856, in the wolds of Yorkshire in 1870, in East Worcestershire in 1880, in Surrey in 1891, and in Herefordshire in 1892 (See *Notes and Queries*, 7th series, vols. xi. and xii.). Even now, in some parts of England, the flail does its work, and the writer's observation and correspondence with responsible persons in many quarters, offers reason to believe that it will be a long time before the small farmer will resign it in favour of other and more up-to-date methods. Not on sentimental grounds, but because it is obvious that on a moderate-sized holding, where few cereals are grown, or where they are cultivated in comparatively inconsiderable quantities, it would not pay to send the corn to be threshed elsewhere, or to hire a machine to thresh it on the farm. Inquiries show that the flail is still being made in several of our shires, including Essex, and the instrument of to-day is

practically the same as that represented in mediæval drawings, although in the Middle Ages it was perhaps somewhat longer in the handle.



FLAIL JOINTS: 1. (top) Suffolk. 2, Norfolk. 3, Essex.

In England the Flail varies as well in form and shape in different counties, as in the wood used in its manufacture. As will be seen, both from the definition already given and from the

accompanying illustrations, it consists of a wooden handle, tied at the end by a leathern or eel-skin thong, or one of cane, to another wooden bar, called a swingle, or souple, or swipple, with which the grain is beaten out (the analogy of a 'swipe' will occur to every cricketer). To allow of its free movement it is constructed on the universal joint principle, that is, a joint which permits of angular movement in every direction. It is manipulated by holding the handle or handstaff in both hands, and swinging the souple over the head in a rotary manner, and then bringing it heavily down on the grain. In some cases the whirling is accomplished by the revolving of the handstaff; in others by the rotation of the souple. Proficiency in its management demands adroitness and skill, which, as in many other things, can only be obtained by constant practice. To those readers who have never used a Flail a practical demonstration will prove the truth of this statement, and they will be fortunate if they come through the experiment without injury.

Regarding the connecting-link or joint, it varied in character in different localities. Dr. Allison states that he had been 'fortunate enough to obtain several varieties which illustrate the local differences, and exhibit the joint that permitted of both the whirling and the striking movements, and that which only allowed of the striking. The latter compelled the revolving of the handstaff in the hand. The joint consisted of two or more of the following parts :—

(1) The termination of the handstaff and souple, and their modifications;

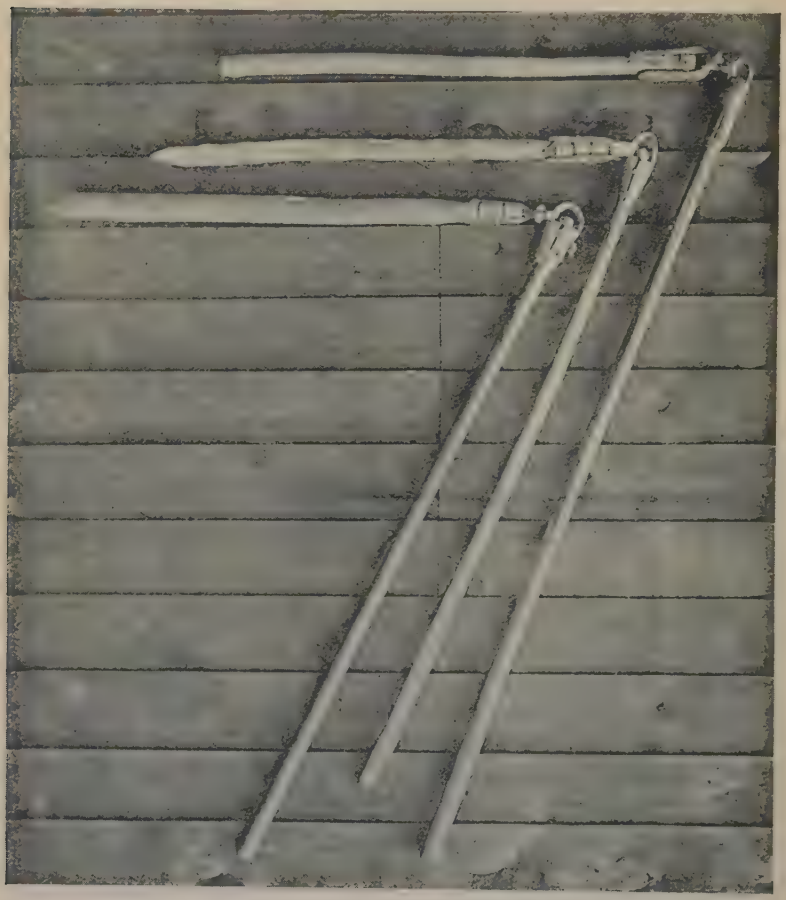
(2) Caps of wood, iron, or leather, fixed by the leashing (laces), etc., to the handstaff, souple, or both;

(3) Thongs of leather or hide, uniting the two.'

The ends of the 'caps' were bent and fixed to the same piece of wood, the loop reaching or projecting some two or three inches beyond the staff, and being fastened on by leather straps, which were often pegged to the handle to prevent slipping. The joint was made of leather or eelskin, skilfully fastened or tied by a leather lace.

The handstaff varies in length and diameter in different shires, but the average length is about five feet to five feet six inches, and an inch to an inch and a half in diameter. The

swingle or souple is about three feet long, and a little larger in diameter than the staff.* The material used for the handle was generally ash, beech, or willow, but rarely oak. The souple was



FLAILS OF SUFFOLK (left handle), ESSEX AND NORFOLK.

made of blackthorn, holly, ash, crab, or oak, the wood being usually the hardest that could be obtained in the neighbourhood. In most cases the end of the souple was more or less pointed.

* The smallest flail that has been brought under our notice is in the possession of Mr. Miller Christy. It was made in Essex, and the ash handstaff is barely four feet in length, with a souple rather long in proportion, measuring two and three-quarter feet. Ash is invariably utilised in Essex for the handstaff, and crab for the souple or swingle.

In a Devonshire example the revolving cap of the haft or handle is made of elm, which is attached by leather to a loop of leather on the souple. The Flails in this county are made, as a rule, by the men who use them, the handle being hazel, ash, elm, or any disused pitchfork staff, the souple being generally of holly, though sometimes of sapling oak, the connecting link being of elm. In Devonshire it is called a 'vlail,' which, of course, is only a local, not a real variant, being, in fact, similar to that which gives us 'vlannen' for 'flannel,' 'vust' for 'first,' or 'vound' for 'found.'

Most of the threshing by Flail was carried on in barns, the men ordinarily working in couples opposite each other, with the sheaves of corn between them, each man striking alternately. In the majority of cases the barn had a wooden floor, which gave a resiliency to the blow delivered. When possible the sheaves were laid on the floor with the corn facing one way; in some cases the sheaves were laid head to head. After the threshing, the corn was winnowed in a huge fan, to get rid of the chaff, dust, etc. It is stated that straw obtained by threshing with a flail remained in an unbroken condition, and formed much better material for thatching than does the straw left after threshing by machinery.*

Before the invention of gunpowder, so familiar an implement as the Flail suggested an obvious modification for use as a weapon of war. The Galloway Flail seems to have been in vogue as a lethal weapon as early as the time of Sir William Wallace, for it is mentioned by Blind Harry the Minstrel, who immortalised the exploits of the Scottish patriot. Though Harry's poem has been discredited as history ('very cavalierly,' as Professor A. F. Murison, in his able *Life of Wallace* asserts), it is extremely unlikely that he would have made a mistake in such detail as this. The Roxburghshire Flail, though used primarily for threshing corn, also figured in Border warfare as a weapon of offence. In hand-to-hand combat it did great execution when wielded by a tall, active, and powerful man.

*Mr. G. W. Gould, of Chigwell, states that an old Essex farmer informs him that the prices paid for threshing by Flail about 1868 were as follows:—

Wheat	... ...	3½d. per quarter.
Beans	... ...	8d. ,, ,,
Barley	... ...	2s. 3d. ,, ,,
Oats	... ...	2s. 0d. ,, ,,

A heavier Flail was sometimes used by Essex labourers for threshing wheat.

The handstaff was about five feet long, and made of ash wood, the souple was three and a-half or four feet in length, and made of iron, the two being joined with a leather thong. The souple was jointed in three places, so that it could be caused to twine round the body of a man and crush his ribs, after the manner of a python or boa constrictor. One stroke would shatter a sword to pieces.

During the seventeenth century the flail suggested a type of instrument of a much more objectionable character than the battle-flail. One such weapon became known as the Protestant Flail, from the fact that it was carried (and employed) by persons who professed go to in fear of their lives during the Popish plot scare (1678-1681). This weapon was invented by Stephen College, known from his bitterness against the Roman Catholics as the 'Protestant joiner.' He is believed to have been born in London about 1635, and acquired a considerable reputation as a carpenter through his skill in woodwork. His zeal in controversy outrunning his discretion, he was twice tried for seditious words, practices, and treason, and was at last condemned to death at Oxford, where he was hanged on August 31, 1681. The Protestant Flail was a most deadly weapon in the hands of a villain. It was made of *lignum vitae*, a wood now almost solely reserved for the harmless 'timber' of the bowling-green. Captain Alexander Radcliffe (1682) wrote an epigram about the Protestant Flail, which is worth reproducing:—

> 'In former days th' Invention was of Wracks,
> To dislocate men's Joints and break their Backs;
> But this Protestant Flail of a severer sort is,
> For *Lignum vitae* here proves *Lignum mortis*.'

W. J. Bernhard-Smith (*Notes and Queries*, 1879, 5th series, vol. xii., pp. 216-7) says that the Flail was often carried by game-keepers, watchmen, and others, and that he remembered an elderly bank clerk in London 'who always had one hanging behind the counter, ready for his hand in case of need.' It was the more elaborate form of the knuckle-duster, life-preserver, or skull-cracker, as well as the loaded policeman's truncheon. That it was a formidable weapon is evident from a description in *Notes and Queries*, 1879, 5th series, vol. xi., p. 53.

'Let the reader,' says S.P. [presumably a barrister, for he writes from the Temple] 'imagine an ordinary round desk ruler, say eighteen inches long, only

of hard, white boxwood. Each extremity is ring-turned, to give a firm grip, so that either end can form a handle. Conceive this sawn across the middle, and then divided into two equal parts. These parts are then connected with two thongs of narrow leather, about three inches in length, one on each side of each piece, by two rivets, screws, or studs, to each end of the leather, making eight fastenings in all, or four on each side. The thongs extend for about an inch down each piece of wood, from the clean central division, which will give a 'play' of an inch to the loose leather. You get thus a weapon nine inches long, capable of being folded and carried concealed in a moderate-sized pocket, and, except in size, exactly similar to the agricultural implement known as a flail. Of this implement the weapon was, in short, a miniature, and when either end was loaded with lead, a vicious blow would easily fracture a man's skull, or fell him dead.'

In *Anecdotes and History of Cranbourn Chase*, by William Chefin (1818, reprinted by Lieut.-Gen. Pitt Rivers, 1888), there is a vivid account of a fight between keepers and deer-stealers in 1780, shewing the vicious use that was then made of the Flail or 'swindgel':—

'On the night of the 16th Decemben 1780, a very severe battle was fought between the keepers and dear-stealers on Chettle Common, in Bursey-stool Walk, which was attended with very serious circumstances. A gang of these deer-stealers assembled at Pimperne, and were headed by a Serjeant of Dragoons, a native of Pimperne then quartered at Blandford, and whose name was Blandford. They came in the night in disguise, armed with deadly offensive weapons called swindgels, resembling flails to thresh corn. They attacked the keepers, who were nearly equal in number, but had no weapons but sticks and short hangers. The first blow that was struck was by the leader of the gang, which broke a knee cap of the stoutest man in the Chase, who was not only disabled from joining in the combat but has been lame ever since. Another keeper received a blow from a swindgel, which broke three ribs, and was the cause of his death some time after.'

It is, however, in its useful and pacific aspect that the Flail mainly concerns us. Long a prominent feature in rural economy, its survival into the twentieth century links up the age of steam and electricity with those remote days when pilgrims ambled to Canterbury and gossipped as they rode, while its gradual passing into disuse pathetically points a moral, and adorns the fateful tale of English agriculture. The place of the thresher, Flail in hand, in the pastoral scene possessed a charm that has made its appeal alike to J. F. Millet, the artist, and Robert Burns, the poet. So memory loves to dwell on the picture of the happy homestead where—

'An old barn gable end was seen,
Sprinkled with nature's mossy green,
Hard on the right, from where the flail
Of thrasher sounded down the vale.'

PUBLIC LIBRARIES POPLAR

THE MARCH OF THE CAVALIERS FROM BOW TO COLCHESTER.

BY G. H. WARLOW.

THE story of the march of the Cavaliers from Bow to Colchester in 1648 does not appear to have received the attention at the hands of our local historians that one might naturally have expected, considering the abundant material existing.

East London and its suburbs have but few Civil War traditions, doubtless owing to their good fortune in having escaped being made a battle ground of the contending parties. Only on one occasion do we find the war on the point of being brought to the door of the inhabitants of East London, and that was the occasion referred to above.

The first Civil War had practically ended at Naseby in 1645. King Charles, after various changes of fortune, became a prisoner at Hampton Court. Negotiations took place between him and the Parliament, the Scots and the Army, for a settlement, but all to no purpose. 'In the midst of their hopes of an accommodation,' says Green, the historian, 'the Army leaders found, with astonishment, that they had been duped throughout, and that the King had fled.' Revolts broke out in various parts. Risings took place in Kent, Essex, Hertford, and Surrey. Old Parliamentary officers seized Pembroke Castle for the King. The fleet in the Downs revolted, sent their captains ashore, and sailed to Holland to the Prince of Wales. The Scots invaded England. Cromwell was sent to subdue South Wales and deal with the Scots. Lord Fairfax was despatched to put down the Kentish rising. At Maidstone, on the 2nd June 1648, after a hard and stubborn fight, the Royalist party was utterly defeated. The Cavaliers then abandoned Rochester, which was immediately occupied by Fairfax. A large body of the defeated Cavaliers under Goring, Earl of Norwich, fled along the London road to Greenwich, pursued by a party of horse. Fairfax, in his letter to the Speaker of the House of Commons, said 'I sent Colonel Whalley with a party of horse and dragoons after them, upon whose approach they have left Kent, and are fled over the water into Essex by Woolwich and Greenwich. Colonel

Whalley is in pursuit, and I doubt not but he will give a good account of that service.'

It was a part of the original plan of the Cavaliers to form a rendezvous on Blackheath, from whence they were to march sword in hand to the Houses of Parliament, to present their 'Kentish petition.' Their plans, however, were upset by the defeat at Maidstone, and their design of marching to Westminster absolutely frustrated. They were even refused permission to march through the city into Essex. Moreover, the expected assistance from the city was not forthcoming and, being hard pressed by Whalley's troops, they resolved to cross the river into Essex.

News having been brought to the Earl of Norwich 'that about Bow there were 2,000 men in arms and more at Chelmsford,' he decided to go over privately into Essex by himself, 'not carrying one servant with him, intending only to go to Stratford or Bow, where his intelligence assured him a Body was gotten together: to assure himself of the truth of it and return, and in case it proved not true, to steer some other design with the Army. Sir William Compton was left with the charge of the Army. Lord Goring, however, 'finding nothing stirring at Bow or Stratford, he made no stay till he came to Chelmsford.'

In the meantime the army at Greenwich, under Compton, began to be much weakened by desertions. The night coming on, and the General not returned according to expectation, 'some timorous spirits began to steal away.' Many soon began to shift for themselves, and 'procuring the ferry boat wafted over to the Isle of Dogge as they thought, for their absolute security.' Very soon after this, a panic seized the rest of the army, and every man began to shift for himself. We are told that 'the greatest part of the foot and some few of the horse at several places transported themselves over the River of Thames, no man knowing what would be the event of their rashness, nor able almost to give a reason for what they did.'

The Quarter-Master General of the Royalist Army, Mr. Matthew Carter, has left us an account of the history of this period of the great Civil War. Mr. Carter was a gentleman of position and influence in Kent, and played a conspicuous part in the stirring events of the Kentish rising. He was taken prisoner

after the siege of Colchester, and during his long confinement wrote an account of the scenes of which he had been an eye-witness, under the title *A Most True and Exact Relation of That as Honourable as Unfortunate Expedition of Kent, Essex and Colchester, by M.C., a Loyal Actor in that Engagement*, 1648. In addition to Mr. Carter's history we have the 'Civil War Pamphlets' in the British Museum.

One of the pamphlets under date of Sunday, 4th June 1648, thus describes the flight and pursuit of the Cavaliers :—

'It was this day certified that Lord Goring, seeing the van of the Parliament's horse sent in pursuit of him to march up towards him, did fly down to the town of Greenwich. He stayed not at Greenwich, but took water, and with the choicest of his men was ferry'd over into Essex, having heard that the Essex men had begun to rise into a body, and planted two drakes on Bow Bridge, where he heard they appeared to stand in a posture of defence, but interrupted none that passed that way. About one of the clock in the afternoon Colonel Whalley, who, with a considerable party of horse, was sent in pursuit of the Lord Goring, did advance after him into Essex over the river and had his rendezvous on Mile End Green, from whence he had sent many prisoners which he had taken to Guild Hall. The Lord Goring being come into Essex, the Militia of the City sent up two drakes to Aldgate, which were planted for the present safety of the City.'

The same newspaper, 'The Kingdom's Weekly Intelligencer,' on the following day, gives a description of the crossing of the river by the Cavaliers.

'Those who this day came from Greenwich do affirm that in a fair and smooth water they transmitted themselves over the Thames, the men being all in boats, and the horses in the water, who being held by the reins, did swim close by the sides of the boats, and followed the conduct of their masters. And this they say was half-an-hour before any forces of the Parliament came down to Greenwich, who about that time made their approaches, some leading two, some of them three horses which they had taken.'

The Royalists appear to have sustained some loss during the crossing of the river. Many deserted, some were taken prisoners, others were drowned. A Royalist paper, the 'Mercurius Eleucticus,' asserts that the contrary was the case. It says that 'not one man or horse of them all, being drowned or taken, except one only by mischance,' but as we learn from other sources, this is not correct. It was most unlikely that a panic stricken army, hotly pursued, could have transplanted itself wholly and without loss from Kent to Essex. Whitelock in his *Memorials* informs us, 'Goring reaches Blackheath, but finding none of the City come forth to join with them, ferry'd over in Lighters and Boat to the Essex side from

Greenwich. The seamen and watermen that had before joined with them, now set upon them, and took many prisoners and good pillage.' A soldier of the pursuing force wrote 'that a strong party of horse was sent forth under command of Colonel Whalley,' in order to pursue the 'Kentish bumkins, for that's the common term our soldiers give them,' and the Cavaliers commanded by Lord Goring, and 'this morning we fell upon them, and have taken some prisoners which are brought thither, some of the enemy fled into the Thames, and others boated over into Essex, and left their horses behind them, many men drowned for haste to get over.' The passage of the Thames is also described by 'The Parliament Kite,' presumably another Royalist paper. 'The old Lord Goring on Saturday last (June 3rd) was with about 2,000 Foota nd 1,000 Horse in Greenwich Park expecting assistance from London and Surrey, but few coming in unto him, he very moderately on Sunday morning ferry'd over his Horse and Foot at Black Wall, and so in grand Equipage marched to Stratford-Lancton and possessed themselves of Bow Bridge.'

'Having thus confusedly as it were,' says Mr. Carter in his little book, 'thrown ourselves over to the other side of the Thames, . . . we had no sooner landed, but supposing ourselves to be in Essex, . . . we unexpectedly understood that we were in Middlesex under the Hamlets of the Tower.' The Cavaliers had hardly got ashore, before they were met by a Regiment of Hamleteers, or the Yellow Regiment of the Tower Hamlets Militia, which had been appointed by the House to intercept their landing. This regiment, says Mr. Carter, was 'drawn up to their arms in several guards ready to receive, and cut off our landing,' so the Cavaliers decided to enter into negotiations with them for a surrender.

Sir William Compton, who was now in charge of the Royalist army (Goring having gone on ahead), treated with the Hamleteers for the whole party, 'before he would permit any man almost to march in amongst them.' The Civil War Pamphlets say nothing whatever about any surrender, for it was of exceedingly short duration as we shall see. Certain 'conditions were drawn up,' we are told by Mr. Carter, between Sir William Compton and the Major of the Hamleteers. It was agreed 'that all our Foot should, upon laying down their

arms, depart to their own homes,' and that 'all Gentlemen and Officers with their horses and arms to march where they pleased also, without any disturbance.'

'But,' says Carter, 'those conditions were soon as almost broke as made.' Some of the gentlemen 'marching through their guards had the horses and arms both taken from them by the Major of the Regiment.' Then the Foot and a greater number of gentlemen came up, 'marching through two or three Guards, no man being permitted to pass any by-way.' 'And considering what a condition an inauspicious fate had reduced us to,' remarks Mr. Carter, 'we began to think of some other way than so lamely disband.' The officers then began to ascertain what were 'the dispositions of the private soldiers.' These expressed themselves as 'resolute to die there in the bed of Honour, than survive such an infamous misfortune.'

So the Cavaliers resolved to make 'a second dispute for conditions,' and to charge right through the Hamleteers. They had not yet delivered up their arms, so they determined to make a dash for freedom.

'And being now in the midst of them every man provided himself accordingly, the foot all lighting their matches, and the gentlemen drawing their pistols, began to alter the constitution of our steering Hamleteers, who left their vanity of jeering; and so we marched on from guard to guard, through the midst of them, as moving to the place of disbanding, where we expected an opposition, and as much resolved to force through it; but that proved the last and utmost guard just at Bow town.'

'But now they are beholding us marching in this resolute manner, and still moulding ourselves into better order were absolutely dashed from a thought of opposition; so we marched on without the least affront, till we came to Bow bridge, where we supposed was the place for our disbanding. At the other end of which bridge was a turnpike, strongly guarded with Musketeers, and having entered upon a bridge, we made a stand to parley with them, but after a very short discourse being asked whether they were friends or foes, we were answered from them, 'Friends'; whereupon we replied, 'If you are friends let your turnpike be opened,' so they opened their turnpike, and, with a very great shout, let us in. And now we were in Essex.'

Mr. Carter does not give us much information regarding old Bow Bridge itself, excepting that on the Essex side of it there was a turnpike. This old bridge was probably the same as that erected by Queen Maud, wife of Henry I., the upkeep of which was vested in the owners of the adjoining monastic lands. We learn from other sources, however, that the original Bow Bridge was only thirteen feet six inches wide, and remained so till 1741,

when it was increased to twenty-one feet. It would appear that the Essex Cavaliers had advanced up to it, if not already taken possession of the bridge. A previous pamphlet, too, has informed us that the Essex men had planted two drakes on Bow Bridge.

Not far from Bow there formerly stood, at Old Ford, a building known as 'King John's Palace,' a description of which has appeared in the *Gentleman's Magazine* for 1793 and 1800. We are told by this magazine that according to tradition 'This palace was first mutilated during the Civil Wars of Charles I.' So it would appear that the damage which was done to this building must have taken place somewhere about the period we have under review. Neither Mr. Carter's account nor the Civil War pamphlets, so far as I can find, allude to the building referred to.

The Cavaliers, as we have seen, marched clear through the Hamleteers, and having recovered themselves after their surrender, charged over Bow Bridge. They carried away into Essex with them as prisoners the Major of the regiment and another officer. These they afterwards released upon parole; they were suffered to go to London, 'but never returned again according to their engagements, by which also you may guess how much honour they had in them.' And so, says Mr. Carter, 'we marched on till we came to Stratford.'

The appearance of the Cavaliers at Bow and Stratford caused some little alarm in the City of London. No one knew what would happen next. General Skippon, the commander of the train-bands, we are told by a Royalist pamphlet, 'drew out as many as he could get of the Hamleteers and other horse and foot (which indeed were not very many, for the trained bands are resolved not one of them to stir) to oppose them.' The Royalists, however, 'came within the time the Essex men expected them,' and shortly after their opponents 'find them alive again at Bow Bridge, where they maintain the pass most gallantly.' In the 'Perfect Weekly Account,' a paper on the other side, it is recorded that 'On Sunday, the 4th June, two drakes were brought up to Aldgate, and there planted, and four at Bishopsgate, the trained bands being in a rendezvous for the defence of Parliament and City.'

On the arrival of the Royalist troops at Stratford, they again met with the General, the Earl of Norwich, who was much

surprised to see them. He was 'again returning back to us expecting to have found us in the same posture he left us in the park at Greenwich.' Norwich immediately gave command 'for the drawing them up into order, and by planting on the green, to procure such refreshment as the place would afford for the present, ere we marched any further.' No doubt the Cavalier forces were drawn up on the spot now occupied by Stratford Church.

While these events were taking place, Colonel Whalley, who had been sent by Fairfax with a considerable party of horse in pursuit of Goring's troops, had also crossed the river and assembled his forces on Mile End Green. To quote the 'Perfect Weekly Account,' 'about this time Colonel Whalley, with a good party of His Excellencies horse, came back out of Kent over into the Essex side of the river Thames, and had his rendezvous on "Miling Green," which is between Bow and London ; he sent many prisoners which they had taken to Guild Hall, and the Lord-General is expected to return suddenly.'

Whalley at once set out to follow the Cavaliers. It was now Sunday, the 4th June 1648. A pamphlet published the following day said :

'Colonel Whalley the last night had like to have been engaged with them not far from Bow, having with them a considerable body of horse, beside three troops sent from Lieut.-General Cromwell, and a troop belonging to the city under the command of Captain Cook. But finding the Foot had lined the hedges, and dressed an ambush for him, he did forbear, and was content to return with two or three prisoners taken, and as many slain.'

A further account of this skirmish is given in a pamphlet entitled 'News from Bowe.'

'On Sunday night last, being the fourth of this instant, there was a small skirmish between some of the Lord Goring's forces, which were joined with the Essex men at Bow, and some of the Lord-General's horse which were come back to Mile End, and are commanded by Colonel Whaley. There were about three men killed on both sides, those of the Essex party were forced to retreat again to Bow Bridge, and further action ceased for the present ; there are more horses mounting in the City of London, to assist those on that side of the river of Bow, and the Lord-General is coming back, and will be on the other side this night or to-morrow. Summons are given to the contrary party for a fuller appearance of the Essex men, who are much disheartened at the news they hear of success of the Kentishmen.'

A Royalist pamphlet, alluding to this affair, remarked that the Cavalier party

'do hourly firret up the Saints on horseback, and those other of Foot drawn out by Skippon to the very end of White Chappell ; having taken and killed divers

of them, which on Monday at night gave such an alarm to the city, that the trained bands were all warned upon pain of death to be in arms, but there was but a slender appearance, and those, too, of boys that had more need to eat than fight. So that if any attempt had been made for entry into the city they should have met but with slender resistance, and so may every day less and less.'

Another paper briefly alludes to the skirmish. 'The Lord Goring, with those at Stratford and Boe, had a dispute with some of ours, where we killed a major and three more, and took six prisoners, with one man slain on our part, and upon assurance of indemnity, the Essex men will be quiet.'

More details of this advance and retreat of Whalley's troops are given by Mr. Carter, who informs us that the Royalist party had no sooner marched over Bow bridge, and hardly drawn up on Stratford Green, when they received 'a very strong alarum by a party of Colonel Whalie's horse who, as it was conceived, came thither purposely upon the intelligence that we were to disband, to make a prey of us when we were naked.' Whalley's Ironsides, we are told,

'marched on a full career (having laid an ambuscade of Dragoons to secure their retreat), as if they would have destroyed us in a minute.'

'But now we were awakened by this alarum, and roused from that drowsy spirit that possessed every man almost, if he but sat down or still on horseback; and drawing out a party of foot to strengthen the guard, rallied a party of horse to the number of thirty, and marching forth the turnpike, gave them such a home charge, that so startled them, as it put them to such a perfect rout in an instant, and killed and wounded many of them; which successful action gave life to our defatigated spirits, and encouraged our party so that they followed the pursuit as far as Mile End Green, but by that means fell into their ambuscade, who fired upon them from the hedges, so they were forced to make as much speed in retreating, though none pursued.'

'In which service,' writes Mr. Carter, 'only one gentleman, a Grecian, being shot by the Dragoons, was left behind about the Green, and in the charge Capt. John Lynne cut over the chin and over the breast, which was all the hurt sustained in it. But although our pursuit continued no further, yet the enemy kept on their flight in that disorder, nobody following them, till they came to White Chappel, which, as I was informed, gave an alarum to the whole city as far as Temple Barre.'

'But now the Hamleteers began again to oppose us, but were soon forced to take sanctuary in Bow Church, where we surrounded them with a party of horse and foot, and put them to treat with us for a quiet returning home to their own houses, engaging themselves never to oppose us again. Thus there was a convertible change of various fortunes in two opposite Parties in less than two hours space.'

These successes were alluded to by 'The Parliament Kite,' which informs us that the Cavaliers 'surprised two companies of the Hamletts, all but those that flung down their arms and

run for it, one of which was said to be that cowardly Gale, alias Ditch (as sordid a villian as needs to be hanged). From Bow on Sunday in the afternoon a party of about 13 horse scouted out as far as Mile End, and gallantly charged some four troops of Fairfax his horse, who like valiant rebels began to run for it, and bid the devil take the hindmost.'

After this the Cavaliers again retired within the turnpike, and strong guards were appointed to command 'all passes and fords about the river, and on all highways and avenues, for hindering the enemy from making incursions upon us; who were again calling and drawing up a strong guard at Mile End Green, both of horse and dragoons. But after this our party, resting a little, began to take heart again.'

Lord Goring now resolved to bring together the various bodies of the Essex Royalists who were up in arms about Chelmsford, and although, as Carter relates, he had not received almost any rest or sleep for four days and three nights, and notwithstanding his great age Norwich posted away to the place mentioned, 'giving order for the quartering that shattered army in Stratford till further orders from him.'

Mr. Carter at this point relates a personal incident :

'But when Quartermaster-General Carter had sent for the constable and given him orders accordingly,' that local official of Stratford, 'makes no long stay ere he returned again, accompanied by three or four burly gentlemen (as I conceive Justices of the Peace of that part of the country), who made it their business to question the Quartermaster-General of his authority of quartering an Army in that country, intimating that they were all quiet before and at peace among themselves and with the Parliament, and that the Parliament had granted them what they desired, and had sent them an act of indempnity. But we bringing an army into their country should draw down the Parliament's army upon them, and make it a seat of war, and they could not any way condescend that we should fix a quarter there, it being no way for their safety, but like to prove the readiest way to their destruction. Cheerful expressions to men that had run through so many hazards and confused difficulties.'

Mr. Carter replied, 'That for the power he quartered that army was by commission from the General, and that he quartered them in that place by immediate command also from him,' to whom he referred them. Sir William Compton, hearing the dispute, also referred to the General, and declined to discuss the business. So the Cavaliers resolved to quarter at Stratford till they received further orders.

'Here we quartered till Wednesday in the afternoon, it being

Sunday morning when we came thither, still keeping the enemy in some play, who lay with their guards within half-a-mile of us, and their scouts still pekiering with us at Bow Townes end.' It is remarkable that no record of this visit of the Cavaliers to Stratford is to be found in any history of the place. Fry's *History of East and West Ham* does not mention the event, nor does any local historical sketch that I have met with. Among the Civil War Pamphlets is a letter written from 'Bow in Essex, 7th June 1648,' 'concerning the proceeding upon publication of the indempnity' :—

'The Commons from Parliament were here and published the indempnity to the inhabitants, and Sir William Hicks and divers others of the gentlemen submitted. And the Lord Goring retreats back from here. But Sir Chas. Lucas, that eminent Cavalier, is come into them, and keeps up the soldiers, making great promises to them. And by his insinuations hath prevailed with the Cavalier party and the soldiers. And they seized on Sir William Hicks and several other gentlemen of the county, and plundered some, which hath much discontented the inhabitants. But divers of those whom they have taken, they permit to pass to London upon their parole, others they have set guards upon. It is said that another party are rising to join with them about Colchester. The Cavaliers themselves bragge that many will come out of Norfolk and Suffolk to assist them. And the officers tell that the king is in the ships upon the coasts of Kent, and that they are possessed of Dover Castle, and divers other castles, and so by lyes and tricks they seduce the people exceedingly. The Commons are (not without great danger) returned back to the Parliament who can give the Houses but an ill-favoured, distracted report of the Cavaliers. Colonel Whaley is ready upon instructions to march to reduce them if the Houses think fit. If the Cavaliers were but gone from amongst us, the inhabitants would be plyable enough to be (now) orderly, and willingly embrace the indempnity, especially seeing the famous city of London so gallantly repulsing their treachery.'

Sir William Hicks, mentioned in this letter, was the owner of Ruckholt House, Leyton. Morant, referring to him, states that 'for his loyalty to King Charles 1st in the Great Rebellion he underwent much trouble and danger.' This letter may, perhaps, explain in some measure Pepys' description of Sir William Hicks's house at Ruckholt, as being 'a good seat . . . but so let run to ruin, both house and everything in it and about it, so ill furnished and miserably looked after, I never did see in all my life.'

While the Cavaliers lay quartered at Stratford the Earl of Norwich continued at Chelmsford engaging the gentlemen of the county to his cause. A party under Sir Charles Lucas joined him. On the other hand, Sir Thomas Honeywood raised horse and foot to oppose the Cavaliers. Norwich now sent orders to

Sir William Compton to march away towards Chelmsford ; 'so we marched away,' writes Mr. Carter, 'from Stratford with our whole party, which by this time was well recruited by many of our men that came up, and divers prentices from London, who came in daily and listed themselves.'

On the Cavaliers marching away from Bow and Stratford, these places were immediately occupied by Whalley's forces, which had been increased and strengthened. Their arrival at Stratford is recorded in the 'State Papers' under date of the 7 June 1648. 'The rebels that were at Bow have been driven thence by Colonel Whalley, who is now at Stratford Langthorn with orders to pursue them.'

In the meanwhile the Royalists were marching along the Romford Road. Passing through Ilford and Chadwell Heath, they reached Romford about Wednesday night, where they once more met the General. The march was not an uninterrupted one, for, says Carter, 'the enemy marching after us so obstructed our march by alaruming us in the rear, that the whole body could not get up till the next morning, though the enemy durst not adventure in all the march to fall on upon the rear guard.'

There is an account of the arrival of Goring's troops at Romford in Terry's *Memories of Old Romford*. On Wednesday, 7 June 1648, the inhabitants of the town were thrown into consternation by the sudden arrival of a body of horse and foot, who took possession of the place. They had feathers in their turned-up caps or hats, their hair was long, and their apparel was loose and not in the best order, nor their manners or language very circumspect. They were Royalist troops, the remains of the unsuccessful army of the Earl of Norwich, who was, according to Clarendon, more fitted for the convivial table than the stern work of the battlefield. The troops had come from Kent, crossing the Thames the very best way they could, and swimming their horses in order to join the Royalists at Chelmsford. These cavalry and infantry soldiers had been chased from Bow by the troopers of the stern Colonel Whalley, who had only given up the pursuit to wait for General Fairfax. The Royalist soldiers spent in Romford that sleepless night, and it was on this occasion that Marks was attacked by the Royalists, when Carew Hervey Mildmay, who was forewarned of their arrival, only saved himself by escaping from a window of

one of the towers, and crossing the moat, plunged into the forest. It would have been a feather in their caps, if the Royalists had secured the owner of Marks. He was a colonel in the Parliamentary army, and was about joining his regiment which he had raised to fight on the side of the Parliament at Colchester. The next day these troopers joined at Brentwood another body of Royalists under the gallant but ill-fated Sir Charles Lucas, who, with Sir George Lisle, was soon to pay the penalty of his loyalty and bravery in the old Castle yard of Colchester. Scarcely had the Royalist troops left Romford, than in clattered the pursuing forces of the Parliamentary party under General Fairfax, presenting a very different spectacle from those who had come and gone. These were distinguished by their high crowned hats, leathern bands armed with pistols, their long rapiers under a loose cloak, and large leather boots. Their demeanour, unlike that of the Royalists, was staid and brusque, their faces presenting an aspect of sour solemnity, and they sang psalms as they went. These soldiers left traces which are still visible of their presence in Romford. According to popular belief, it was during their brief stay in the town that many of the monumental tokens of loving affection to the dead were despoiled by sanctimonious sacrilege.

Reference is made to the ancient mansion of 'Marks' in the book on *Secret Hiding Places*, by Allan Fea, which informs us that 'The old house, Marks, near Romford, pulled down in 1808, after many years of neglect and decay, proved to have been riddled with hollow walls.'

To return to Mr. Carter's narrative. 'After the Royalist troops had spent the night at Romford, the next day, which was the 8th June, 1648, we marched on towards Burntwood, whither Sir Chas. Lucas was advanced with a party both of horse and foot to join with us. And having intelligence how the enemy followed us with alarums in our rear, commanded forth all the horse that were then in the town to assist us; so we marched up and quartered that night at Brentwood.'

At this place a number of other gentlemen joined the Royalist party. A body of about fifty, who had made a rendezvous at Hyde Park Corner, by marching all night reached Epping. Here, however, there was a party of the enemy to oppose them, and a skirmish took place. 'They (the Cavaliers) marched up, and

being well horsed, charged through them, and the next day came up to us, having lost only one man, and one horse, but the horse was recovered by a countryman, and the gentleman came on afterwards, a party being sent to fetch him.'

The Cavaliers arrived at Chelmsford on the 9th June, their numbers still increasing. A party of Hertfordshire men, under Lord Capel, now joined them. The united forces, numbering some 4,000 men, marched on to Colchester, and after a short struggle with the inhabitants forced their way into the town on the afternoon of June 12th, 1648.

While these events had been happening in Essex, Lord Fairfax, after his victory at Maidstone and occupation of Rochester, marched the main body of his army to Gravesend. Colonel Whalley, as before mentioned, was sent after Goring, and Colonels Rich and Hewson detached to relieve Dover Castle, and recapture the Castles of Sandown, Deal and Walmer. At Gravesend, Fairfax's army crossed over the river to Tilbury, and from thence marched to Billericay, where they quartered the night. On the 11th June Fairfax reached Brentwood. Leaving his army to continue its march he fetched Sir Thomas Honeywood with 2,000 volunteers from Coggeshall, and by the 13th June, less than a day after the Royalists had seized Colchester, the whole of his forces had arrived before its walls. It would appear that Fairfax did not follow the Royalists into Romford, as related by Romford's historian, as he reached the Colchester road *via* Brentwood. No doubt the troops of Colonel Whalley are intended. An attack on Colchester by Fairfax having failed, the place was besieged. The well-known siege of Colchester lasted about twelve weeks, during which time the inhabitants suffered great privations.

The frontispiece of this number represents the carved mantel in an oak panelled room of a house recently sold in the village street of Clavering, near Stanstead Mountfitchet. The panelling in a second room and the oak staircase, are of the time of Queen Anne; another apartment contains richly carved lintels and window frames, with hanging bunches of fruit carved in high relief in the style of Grinling Gibbons.

POPLAR

A COUNTRY DOCTOR IN 1644.

BY MISS CHARLOTTE FELL SMITH.

THE day-book of a country practitioner kept during the Civil War need not necessarily reflect anything of the stir and turmoil of the times. The contests and fightings of these years when King Charles was vainly clinging to his dwindling authority, when the great voice of the people was gaining force and volume, are not to be guessed at from the yellow pages of the doctor's manuscript. The medical man concerns himself only with his medicaments, his pills and his powders, and the wonderful remedies and cures that his more famous brethren in town are able to effect, the rumours of which penetrate even to Dunmow in Essex.

A calf-bound volume * in the British Museum affords these reflections, together with many others, for its contents are curious, and I am not aware that they have ever been written about or described.† The entries are various ; recipes for cures give place for some twenty-seven pages to the record of daily visits to patients within a very large circuit around Dunmow, and herein is much of local interest to us.

The doctor lived at Great Dunmow, and his name, it is presumed, was Swallow (more appropriate, perhaps, for his patients). 'Gulielmus Swallow' is written upon the inside of the cover of the book. Underneath it he appends the appropriate motto for a doctor : 'Ars longa, vita brevis.' His practice extended for many miles around, and the notes of patients' names are full of considerable interest. Lady Jenoure, a Bramston from Skreens, and second wife of Sir Andrew Jenoure, of Great Dunmow, sometimes employed our doctor, but she was also under the care of Dr. Atkinson. There is a prescription for pills for Mrs. Elizabeth Wale ; others for 'filia Mr. Woodroofe,' the Leez chaplain ; 'Johannes Creed of Felsteed' ; Richard Marshall of Linsell ; John Milbank of Aythorp Roding ; Nicholas Humfrey and Edward Chinnery of Stebbing, where the doctor had many patients, including one 'Materfamilias Levitt,' a true Stebbing name. 'Domina

*Sloane Collection of MSS., No. 1529.

†My attention was first drawn by Mr. Hastings Worrin to a paragraph in the *Chemist and Druggist* for June 15, 1907, containing reference to the MS., from which an old recipe for laudanum was quoted.

Wiseman, of Great Dunmow,' is another patient ; in one place she is 'Clarissima Domina Wiseman'; she was evidently a profitable 'case' to our doctor, and was probably a widowed dowager of the old family of Wiseman, of Great Canfield Park, a few miles away.

There are some prescriptions 'Pro uxore mea' ; they seem, however, simple enough, and we will not suspect the doctor of trying experiments at home. The last prescription in the book, written on the cover, is for 'my daughter Frances.' Another relation treated is 'my cozen Pilcher,' and there is one for 'my littel boy' : was he an only son ? The practice extended over a wide district, as we have already seen. Patients are named at Hatfield (Broad Oak), Good Easter, Great Bardfield (materfamilias Brett), Thaxted, Wimbish, Tilty, Hallingbury, Great Waltham—the patients there are named Archer and Barnard—Great Canfield (Dennis Woods), Beauchamp Roding, Debden, and Broxted. Lady Maynard, of 'Easten Parva Att ye Lodge,' was one who sought the doctor's ministrations, and there are special notes of another patient at Easton Lodge called 'Parnelle Patteridge' (? Partridge), who suffered from paroxysms of epilepsy. Many visits were paid to this patient in October 1645, viz., on 15th, 16th, 17th, 18th, then again on 23rd (by this time it is 'spuria epilepsia'), 24th, Nov. 15th, and so on. These bedside visits occupy about 27 pages of the book, the rest is closely filled with recipes for the cure or alleviation of every ill that mortal flesh in the years 1644 and 1645 was heir to. No modern valetudinarian will learn with surprise that the diseases diagnosed were but few. The changes are rung merrily on the old-fashioned stock complaints :—Consumption, the flux, fistula, Hystericke, dysenterie, a green wound, fitts, Goute, Ricketts.

The recipes seem to be considered possessed of additional efficacy if they have received the sign manual of royal or noble usage. Thus, 'The Kinge of ffrance his Balsame' will be a never failing remedy, and my Lady Bannister's faith in '4 glysters (blisters), applied by Sir Theodore Mayern's appointment, in the space of a day and night,' is truly pathetic. 'This famous Dr.'s apothecarie telled me that he bled the Earl of Lesters daughter after the small pox were come out, when she had above 40 comed out uppon her face and elsewhere, and he did it, and she did well.' Other distinguished patients were Sir Andrew

Jenoure (a prescription given 'wrought with him very well'), and Mr. James Milburne. One page is devoted almost exclusively to 'Mr. Wales pills that he useth to take in the spring,' written very large that the worthy Doctor may easily find it when necessary.

The notes on cases with which the book ends must have been continued long after the entries of daily visits ceased, for there is an account of 'fitts that Mr. Sowell, bailiffe at my Lord of Warwicks,' had in July 1653.' These attacks were apparently cured by applying pigeons to his feet, plasters to the insides of his arms, and 'glysters' when he was a little better. This remedy was a favourite one, as we find in other instances.

'A younge man of my acquaintance was sicke in London of a feaver and did talke idely and did not rest. 2 doctors, upon consultation, applied 2 broad blistering plasters to his armes between the shoulder and ye Elbow, quite round his Arme, and when they were taken off, melilote plasters were applied. And as many pigeons, at 1s. a pigeon, were applied to his feete, renewing them once in 6 hours, as cost him 40s. This man did well.'

No modern dentist will forbear a smile at the doctor's 'infallible remedy for the toothache,' viz.: 4 peppercorns, rosemarie and oyster shells powdered, mixed with honey and vingar, and applied in a fine ragge.'

To touch for a few lines on some of the other remedies applied; this is after all no new subject, and we are familiar with those weird nostrums to be found in all old recipe books. William Swallow, the Dunmow physician, if he it was who penned this volume, seems to have wrought marvellous cures with very simple means. Oyle of aniseed, balsam, aloes, rhubarb, these are still the stock in trade of every genuine practitioner as well as every quack and bottle washer in the profession of medicine, but 'Snayle Milk,' or to put it more elegantly 'Lac Linacium,' was a choice drug not to be found in the Pharmacopeia. Who could demur to the following cure? 'A gentlewoman that could not digest her meate, and could not drinke wine nor strong beere, was wisht to take a littel Cinamon water in a draught of small beere after her meate or meals, and it did her much good.'

'A gentleman telled me that to swallow once or twice in a day 5 or 6 olive stones is an excellent thinge for ye stone, and

that it cured a friend of his. My thinks if they were beate to powder would be better.'

'I was told that the intrales of a Hare, vide: the heart, ye liver and ye Lunges, dried and beaten to powder, did cure one of convulsion fitts that had laboured a longe time with them, and took divers medecines, but all in vaine.'

Occasionally among these wonders of hearsay we light on a passage of ethics and philosophy that emanates from the *Religio Medici* or the *Pseudodoxia Epidemica* of that great master of minds and eminent physician, Sir Thomas Browne. But the country practitioner has not often time to soar to these heights, and is more interested in boiling 'the blacke tops of crabbs clawes' with white amber and 'the bone that is found in the hearte of a ffarte' (hawk).

Among the professional friends of whom the doctor writes, is Dr. Wright, who successfully treated Sir William Luckin, for fever and 'phlegmon' in his arme, with marsh mallow roots boiled in milk, bran meale, oyle of roses, and wood sorrell. Dr. Laurence Wright, the above-named, was born at Hornchurch, married an Essex wife, Mary Duke, a doctor's daughter, of Colchester. He obtained his medical education at Leyden and Padua, and was head of the College of Physicians for many years before his death in 1657. There is a monument to him and his wife in South Weald Church. He was physician to Oliver Cromwell and the Charter House. Lady Luckin made a wonderful cure of Goodwife ffen, of her own parish of Little Waltham, who had been poisoned by a spider, by applying a plaister of mithridate. Dr. Burnett is another authority. Dr. Francis Glisson, the regius professor of medicine at Cambridge, who passed through the Siege at Colchester, and was sent out thence to make terms, is quoted, and one example ends with :—'thus died Dr. Grinder's wife of Braintree.' Dr. Buttler, and 'Dr. Mathias his Palsie Water' also occur.

Dr. Wedderburne's and Dr. Buckenham's treatments of various persons are cited, also Dr. Ede's. Sir Maurice Williams, 'one of ye College of Physicians'; Sir Theodore Mayerne, son of a French Protestant pastor, and also Fellow of the College, and Queen's Physician, are quoted as considerable authorities.

Thus our Dunmow Doctor in 1645, was obviously in touch

with many of his professional brethren in London, and some who rose to eminence in Medicine.

Dunmow, until the advent of the railway fifty years ago, was as little unchanged as any town in Essex, and even a mid-Victorian practitioner may have had to cover more than twenty miles from end to end of his practice. So we can picture to ourselves easily the worthy Dr. Swallow's daily round ; what we are less likely properly to appreciate is the industry with which, in those days of scanty learning and less penmanship, he kept his Diary daily written up.

MET. BOROUGH OF POPLAR PUBLIC LIBRARIES

ESSEX WOOLLEN MANUFACTURES, 1629.

BY REV. ANDREW CLARK, LL.D.

A LARGE portion of Dr. Firth's MS. 'Lieutenancy Book for Essex' is devoted to the distress occasioned by stagnation in the wool trade of the county, which became acutely felt in the spring of 1629. Up till then, the Essex Justices testify, the bayes-makers of Bocking and Braintree alone had spent £500 a week in wages to their weavers, and £1,000 a week in purchase of wool. There was prepared at this crisis, *i.e.* in April 1629, a detailed report on the woollen trade in Hinckford hundred, the centre of Essex wool manufacture, undoubtedly for transmission to the Privy Council. This report is here printed. A few clerical errors are corrected in brackets.

A breife declaration concerninge the state of the manufacture of woolls in the Countie of Essex.

There are within this countie aboute 12 or 14 townes wherein is exercised the manufactures upon wolls, in all which there are not fewer that receive the[ir] livelyhoode and dependance thereon, by that meanes, then 50 thowsand persons. The principall of the clothinge is Colchester, Cogshall, Witham, Bockinge, Braintree, Dedham, of which townes, upon examination, wee finde the condition at this tyme to bee as followeth :—

[1] *Colchester.* In, and by, this towne of Colchester there are above Twentie thowsand persons mainteyned, and have dependance, by the Manufactures of Woolls into Bayes and Sayes.

For the trade of Bayes, itt hath much declyned since the tyme they were prohibited in Spaine, which was aboute two yeares before the breach of the peace.* At which tyme th[ey] made in that towne 400 peeces of Bayes in a weeke, and as many Sayes, which were then sold for vi*li.* per peece. But, since that tyme, they have not made above 100 peeces a weeke, one weeke with another; and the price fallen to little above iiii*li.* And, for this 5 or 6 weekes last past, they have not made above 50 bayes a weeke, of which very few are sold, unlesse by some very poore men, who, of necessitie, have beene enforced to pawne or sell with very greate losse. Soe as there remaines, of that poor quantitie, above 6,000 pounds worth yet unsold.

But the chiefe Manufacture of that towne beinge Sayes, whereof they make aboute 400 peeces a weeke, the rates and prices whereof are divers (from 50*s.* peece to viii*li.* peece), these Sayes, within this 5 or 6 weeks, were bought of [= off] as fast as they could make them; but since that tyme the Marchant buyeth none att all, soe as theire remaines upon theire hands above 6,000*li.* worth in money unsold. They brought up, this weeke, and the last, above viiic. [=800], and theire warehouses now in towne are now soe full as they are scarce capable of any more.

Their chiefest Vent was wont to bee aboute the springe, unto the Marchant tradinge into France, Lygorne [= Leghorn] and other places. Theire course in sale hath not beene to tye themselves to any certaine persons, but to sell indifferently to such Marchants as would give the best price. Their stocks and creditts beinge now spent, they are readie generally to give over trade, as many alreadie have done.

[2]. *Coggeshall.* The persons employed in, and by [=beside], this towne by the Manufacture of Bayes are att least 5,000. The proportion which they usually made, for some yeares last past, hath beene a hundred peeces a weeke. But, for this last yeare, they have not made above 80 peeces a weeke. They have remaininge upon theire hands above 1,500 peeces, of which they cannot make sale. As this beinge a very poore towne and unruly, [it is] certaine the multitudes of the poorer sort must starve, or use unlawfull meanes to support themselves, if present reliefe bee not afforded.

*War with Spain, March 1624 to 1630.

[3] *Witham.* In, and by, this towne are above 2 thousand mainteyned aboute Manufactures of Bayes. The weekly proportion which they were wont to make was some 40 or 50 a weeke. But, within this 6 weeks, they have not beene able to make above 10 peeces a weeke. Duringe which tyme they have had noe sale att all, nor can gett the Marchants soe much as to looke upon them, or take them in pawne. Soe, as they professe, they bee afraide to goe home, beinge not able to pay theire workmen or to sett them any more att worke.

[4] *Braintree.* In, and by, this towne by the Manufacture of Bayes is mainteyned, and have dependance, betweene 3,000 or 4,000 persons heretofore. The proportion which they were wont to make was aboute 100 peeces a weeke. But, within this 5 or 6 weeks last past, there have not beene made above 40 peeces a weeke, of which few or none can bee sold. Soe as there remaines upon theire hands 1,500 peeces unsold (or above), whereof above 600 peeces bee in this towne. The rest they doe not bringe up, because they have noe sale for them in towne. The towne havinge many poore, and those of the better sort are not able longe to maynteyne them, it is doubted many of them will forsake theire dwellings suddainely and give over theire trade.

[5.] *Bockinge.* In, and by, this towne by the Manufacture of Bayes are sett on worke 7,000 persons. Within this seaven yeares they were wont to make fower hundred peeces a weeke. Since, they fell, by little and little, to Three hundred; and lately they have not beene able to make above One hundred a weeke; and within this five or six weeks, not above fortie a weeke, for, havinge had little or noe sale, a greate number have beene undone and forced to give over theire trade quite. Theire remaine upon theire hands, unsold, above two thowsand peeces, whereof seaven hundred are in this towne; and, theire warehouses beeinge full, they forbeare to bringe up any more. That towne abound [s] with poore, whereof many are very unrulie; and, havinge noe employment, will make the place verie hazardous for men of better Ranke to live amongst them.

[6.] *Dedham (and Langham).* This towne subsists by makinge of the clothes called *sulloled* clothes,* by which they sett a worke above 3,000 people. They havinge now upon theire

* Word written 'sulloled' but hesitatingly. The copyist clearly was not sure of the word in the original and followed the pen-strokes. (? 'Suffolk').

hands above 3,000 clothes, worth att the least 10*li.* a cloth, which amounts to the somme of 30,000*li.* or above. They have not sold above 100 clothes this 18 monethes, for that theire usuall sale, and chiefe tyme of sale, is aboute the springe of the yeare, att what tyme they were wont to have theire cloth wholie taken of by the Turky and East-Country Marchants. Who now refusinge to buy any, these, [with] many other adioyninge townes in Suffolke who subsist by this kind of clothinge, to the number of above 100,000 persons, are like to bee utterly undone and ruinated, if some speedie course bee not taken therein.

[7.] The state of the townes in Essex besides, which are subsisted by these Manufactures, is as the former, save that only theire numbers are farre lesse; but theire povertie is exceedinge greate. And lamentable is the beinge of all this Multitude of people which live by these Manufactures; few or none that can subsist unlesse they bee paied theire wages once a weeke; and many of them that cannot live, unlesse they bee paied every night; many hundreds of them havinge noe bedds to lye in, nor foode, but from hand to mouth to mainteyne them selves, their wives, and children.

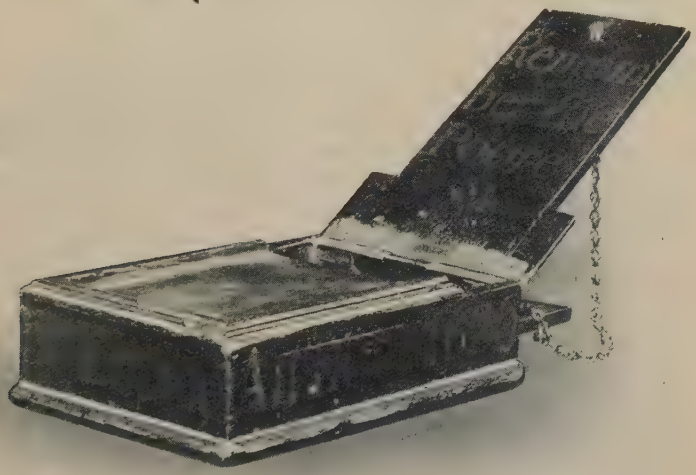
The phrase 'to bring up' recalls an obsolete condition of cloth-making; and is, therefore, probably unintelligible to most readers of to-day. There were no factories, or joint workshops. Each weaver, at his own home, had a room in which he owned, and worked at, a hand-loom. He received from his employer the amount of wool equal to the piece he was expected to produce; and, in ordinary course, brought back the finished web to his employer's warehouse, thereupon receiving payment for his work. At this crisis, however, the want of sale so encumbered the warehouses, that the employer preferred that the journeymen-weavers should keep back their finished work, instead of bringing it into the warehouse. I remember very distinctly, in the train on my way from home to St. Andrews University and on the return journey, about 1870, passing (outside Ladybank Station in Fifeshire) a row of one-storey thatched cottages, in the one end of each of which a handloom-weaver was diligently sending his shuttle to and fro. This was about the last of the industry. The weaving there was linen, not wool.

PUBLIC LIBRARIES POPLAR

THE ALMS BOX AT ALL SAINTS CHURCH, EPPING.

BY CHARLES B. SWORDER.

THIS oak box, of which an illustration from a photograph is shown, is nine inches long, with a handle, an extension, as it were, of the bottom of the box, 4½ inches more. It is 6 inches wide and 2¼ inches deep. The hinges, and the chain which the collector holds when passing it, thus keeping the lid open, are



EPPING ALMS BOX, 1626.
Photo. by Mr. E. Challoner Courtney.

all modern, having been restored. The slit near the hinges is the opening for the coins contributed by the congregation, who, on the lid, are bidden to 'Remember the Poore.' The box is painted green and the lettering is gilt. One side of it is plain, but it has evidently borne an inscription, as the front lettering begins 'do Epping,' and on the side shown: 'Anº Dºmi 1626.' On the under side,

RESTORED IN 1826.
HENRY L. NEAVE, M.A., VICAR.
THOMAS HART, } CHURCHWARDENS.
DANIEL GINGELL, }

A former vicar wished to put the box away as useless, but the

churchwarden, of nearly fifty years of office, declined to use any 'new-fangled' bags, and thus the old box has been saved from destruction and continues to gather alms for the poor of the parish of Epping.

It is interesting to note that the vicar of the date on the box was the Revd. Jeremy (Jeremiah) Dyke, son of the Revd. William Dyke, of Coggeshall, Essex, who held office 1609-1639. He is said to have refused to place the Communion Table to the east end of the church (altar-wise) in accordance with the orders of Bishop Laud in 1616. This table and the altar rails are still in the church, although they are not in their original position. The Revd. C. Wright, in *Nonconformity in Epping*, claims that the said J. Dyke was the founder of nonconformity in the parish, and says that he was buried in the chapel ground, but this was not so, as the parish register entry of April 9, 1639, shows that he was buried at the parish church as vicar of Epping.

At this date, 1639, the Church benefited by the will of Lady Katharine Wentworth,* in which she says :—'I do give to buy twenty pounds a year land of inheritance ffour hundred pounds, [of] which I would have eighteen pounds given every year to the poor of the parish on the day of my death, and fforty shillings to a preacher for a sermon before the money be distributed, that the first care may be had of their soules. And this to begin the first daie twelve months after my death, and so for ever once a year, provided it be all given in the parish where my body shall lye, which I desire may be in the Church where my son, the Lord Gray, and my daughter Gray, intend to be buried in, and to that Church I would have a guilte cupp with a cover given for a Communion cupp, and the daie of my buriall to be given amongst the poore fifteen pounds and ffive pounds to the minister.' This cup has her coat of arms and the following inscription :—

'Sanctae Ecclesia Parochiali de Epping,
Nobilissima Domina Katharina Wentworth,
in sacros eius Heroina Usus donavit 1639.'

*Lady Katherine Wentworth was daughter of Sir Moyle Finch, Bart., by his wife Elizabeth, daughter and heir of Sir Thomas Heneage, of Copt Hall, who, after his death, was created (1628) Countess of Winchilsea. Lady Katherine married Sir John Wentworth, of Gosfield Hall, one of the earliest baronets created by James I., June 29, 1611 (it will be remembered that 18 baronets of the first batch were created five weeks before, May 22). He died without male issue in October 16[illegible] when the baronetcy became extinct. His widow went to live apparently at Copt Hall [illegible] her eldest daughter Cicely, married 1627 to William Lord Grey of Werke, who was c[illegible] the Parliament Speaker of the House of Lords and Commissioner of the Great [illegible]dy Wentworth was buried at Epping 25th, and her will proved 29th, Sept., 1639, [illegible]nd daughter Grey' having elected to be there buried : Lady Grey on Feb. 1, 1668 ; [illegible] Grey on August 7, 1674.

Underneath the foot the weight of the cup is given as '29 ounces—$\frac{1}{8}$—$\frac{0}{8}$.' I conclude that this is the Communion cup

Photo by Mr. E. J. Challenor Courtney.

CHURCH PLATE OF EPPING.

The Wentworth cup, 1639, *and Conyers' salver and paten*, 1768.

which was re-gilt by an order of the vestry in 1770, as hereafter mentioned.

Mr. Dyke was succeeded by Mr. Edward Rochester, A.M., who as he had already signed the register in 1634, may have been a curate under Dyke.

In 1641 Dr. Thomas Holbeck, S.T.B., was instituted '*per resign. ult. vic.*' The living was sequestrated about 1643, and then comes the following entry in the register:

Mr. Wilkerson
Mr. John Harper } 'Both in Oliver Cromwell's time.'

The report of the Committee of Plundered Ministers says of the latter: 'An able Godly-preaching minister.'

Dr. Holbeck was restored in 1666. At his death in 1681, Mr. James Lomax was appointed. It was during his vicariate that four new bells, dated 1707, were hung, at the cost of the trustees of John Baker's Charity. (See my previous note in the *Essex Review*, vol. xiv., p. 40, January 1905.)

Mr. John Lloyd was vicar in 1710 on the presentation of Lord North and Gray, of Winchilsea House. This house was afterwards converted into a posting inn, called Epping Place.

Mr. Stephen Waller, LL.B., M.A., succeeded on the presentation of Edmund Waller, in 1754, and it was during his incumbency that the services at St. John the Baptist Free Chapel in the town, two miles distant from the parish church of All Saints, were discontinued by the vicars of Epping. The Rev. S. Waller was bumped at the beating of the bounds of the parish in 1762. 'The Vicar, according to ancient custom, gave a breakfast at the Cock and Pye.' This house was formerly called the Peacock Pye, but is now the Cock and Magpie. It is situated on the old road from Waltham Abbey to Latton Priory, thence into the Eastern Counties.

Mr. William Lockwood, M.A., succeeded in 1768, and a silver gilt flagon, with the Conyers coat of arms and the following inscription, was presented to the Parish Church, 'Copt Hall Chappel, Essex. The gift of Lady Henrietta, the wife of John Conyers, Esqre., to the Church of Epping in Essex, May 1st, 1768.' A silver paten with the same arms on the foot, also a salver with the same inscription, stamped FS in a shield, which is the date-mark of 1740; the second shield has the initials of the maker. These came from a private chapel at Copped Hall when it was mainly pulled down, though a part remains in the present garden at Copped Hall. In a minute of a vestry held

in 1768 it is stated, 'Lady Henrietta Conyers gave a flagon, patin and salver of gilt plate, together with the books and furniture for the communion table and pulpit.' At the vestry, Oct. 17th, 1770, 'it is ordered that the old communion cup be disposed of and the moneys arising by the sale thereof be applied in regilding the communion cup now in use.'

The Rev. Edward Conyers, A.M., was presented in 1780 by Mr. John Conyers. Edward was vicar of Walthamstow, from whence the Conyers family came to Epping, having purchased the Copped Hall estate, about 1734, of Lord North.

The Rev. Henry L. Neave, A.M., was presented by Mr. Henry John Conyers or Mrs. Ashley in 1822.

The Rev. Forbes E. Winslow, A.M., by Mr. George Wythes in 1873, he being succeeded by the Rev. Edward Buckmaster in 1878, during whose incumbency and by whose unselfish liberality the two churches were again united, and the church of St. John the Baptist, in the town, was by Act of Parliament in 1888 made the parish church. A new church, on the site of the old chapel of St. John the Baptist, was then commenced to build, and is at the present time being completed.

The church in the Uplands is now a chapel of ease, and here the old wooden alms box still does duty, as it has done during the incumbency of fifteen vicars and ministers of Epping.

AN OLD ESSEX MANOR HOUSE.

A REMINISCENCE BY MRS. HUBERT BOURKE.

IN the article which appeared in the *Essex Review* of last April on the Althams of Mark Hall in the 17th Century, mention is made of a very old and interesting house long since disappeared, Otes Manor House, High Laver.*

At this day it is difficult to trace the foundations of a building fraught with so much historical interest. The old moat, the well, part of the orchard wall, and even a few very old apple trees remain to tell their tale of utter ruin and desolation ; but above all these still stand, with magnificent and pathetic interest, the two splendid beech trees under which John Locke, the

*See an illustrated article on John Locke, by Stewart Gow, in *E.R.* xiv. p. 21.—Eds

eminent philosopher, writer, politician, and conversationalist, penned in his latter days many of those famous essays which were devoured by Voltaire, and appear to have had a far-reaching influence on his writings.

After a life of strenuous work and exile, John Locke had come to live his last days, and die, under the roof of his old friend, Sir Francis Masham. Persecuted and hunted from England, owing to his sympathy with the cause of Monmouth, which had embittered him with James, he had to remain concealed for a long time in Amsterdam, until the Revolution of 1688, when he was brought back in the fleet which conveyed over the Princess of Orange.

When the hospitable doors of the old home were opened to him he fell into kind and sympathetic hands, for the good Damaris Lady Masham was a daughter of an old friend and fellow writer, Dr. Cudworth. The tablet setting forth her simple virtues can still be read on the walls of the church at High Laver. It must have been a typical gabled Essex manor house, probably built of wood, lath, and plaster, after the fashion of the houses of that date which still exist in the neighbourhood. It had low latticed windows and a projecting gabled porch, but the great feature was the tall square upstanding block of red brick, which dated unmistakeably from Queen Anne, and which can be distinctly recognised in the prints of the house. The gardens must have been extensive, and ran down to a lake, which is still beautiful. An avenue of trees, long since disappeared, was on either side of the road, now a mere muddy cart track, and in some places almost impassable; but the splendid beech trees still remain, and we should be thankful, for under their leafy shade were penned Locke's published *Letters to his Friends*, *The Essay on the Human Understanding*, his work on *Education*, and his *Reasonableness of Christianity*. Here, tended by the gentle Damaris to the end, he faded away in 1704. His square brick tomb, enclosed with iron railings, stands on the south side of the Church wall, with a Latin inscription, and coat of arms above. His faithful friends lie near him.

Three years after his death the old place must have been turned inside out, for Samuel Masham, the son of the house, brought home a merry bride, Abigail Hill, the favourite of Queen

Anne, and cousin of the celebrated Sarah Jennings, the future Duchess of Marlborough.

The peaceful country life of the old house must indeed have undergone considerable change when these brilliant and witty ladies fluttered down in their state coaches along the muddy, marshy Essex lanes, with their train of attendant Harleys, to discuss the burning state questions of the day, and also to whisper treasonable secrets in favour of the exiled House of Stuart. The square block addition to the house probably dated from this period. These intrigues came to an end when Queen Anne died, and after her death—the deluge. The fickle Harley, become Lord Oxford, was thrown into the Tower. Let us hope that the now forlorn Lady Masham came to rest and spend the last years of her turbulent life under Locke's beeches. She lived until 1734, and history draws a veil over the last years of that old house. After the death of her grandson Samuel, the second Baron Masham, in 1776 without heirs, the house passed through various vicissitudes, until in 1822 some miscreant owner razed it to the ground, and the only vestiges remaining are a few curiously carved beams which still support the roof of an adjacent barn.

MET. BOROUGH OF POPLAR PUBLIC LIBRARIES

PURVEYANCE IN ESSEX.

BY REV. ANDREW CLARK, LL.D.

PURVEYANCE and cart-taking (*E.R.* xvii., 166) meant archaic rights of the Crown to impound provisions, fodder, fuel, etc., and to impress workmen, horses, carts, and utensils, for the service of the royal household, at rates far below those of the ordinary markets. The attitude of the counties towards these imposts passed through three stages: first, no action was taken, and individuals had to suffer by the purveyors seizing on their cattle and goods; second, the counties levied a rate, out of which contractors (then called 'undertakers') were paid to deliver, in manner and time required, the provisions claimed; and third, out of the county rate, direct money payment was made to the Crown officials. Our constitutional historians, Hallam, Stubbs, and the others, have many notices of this oppressive system, of popular outcries against it,

and of Statutes and Orders in Council which sought to remove particular abuses of it. So far as I know, however, exact figures as to these charges are nowhere given, and, consequently, the following returns for the county of Essex are not only of local interest, but contribute something towards the practical explanation of what was for some centuries a particularly burning question in national politics. The returns are condensed from Professor Firth's MS. (*E.R.* xvii., 157), pp. 543, 580; and are purposely confined to a statement of the actual charges legally imposed on the county. A future paper may perhaps exhibit the odious ways in which the officials misused their powers in order to rob the county and its inhabitants.

On March 26, 1593, the County Commissioners (Sir Thomas Mildmay and Sir John Petre, knights) came to terms with the Queen's Commissioners as to a partial revision of the old agreement as to purveyance.

Essex was to continue providing 500 quarters of wheat yearly. The wheat was to be sweet, dry, and free from smut. The price paid by the Crown was to be only 6*s.* 8*d.* a quarter, and, even at that rate, the Crown purveyor of wheat was, by old custom, to be allowed to defer payment for a year. It follows that, in June 1595, when wheat was 42*s.* 8*d.* a quarter, the county had to face a heavy charge in making good the difference between 'the queen's price' and the market price.

'At the Court gate,' *i.e.*, wherever the queen was resident at the given date, the county had to deliver as follows:—10 oxen on Good Friday and 10 on the Friday before Whitsunday; 150 muttons (*i.e.*, sheep) on May 1, and 150 on Oct. 31; 50 porks (*i.e.*, pigs) on Nov. 1, and 50 on Nov. 15; 6 boars on Dec. 6 (in readiness to be boiled down for Christmas brawn); and 30 flitches of bacon (with the hind gammon) on the Tuesday before Easter.

In weekly droves, according to notice to be given, Essex was to deliver at Grays, between Dec. 10 and May 10, 1,200 lambs; and at Romford, between Oct. 12 and May 1, 300 veals (*i.e.*, calves).

It is specified that the boars shall be good and large, and of two years old; and that the other beasts shall be good and fat. Each ox is to weigh at least 6 cwt.; and each sheep at least 46lb.; and each calf is to be 6 weeks old or over.

At the queen's poultry-store in London, Essex is to deliver yearly, in batches as required, 5 dozen geese, 10 dozen capons, 12 dozen hens, 40 dozen pullets, 150 dozen chickens. Also, at the same place, 400lb. of good and sweet butter every Monday, and 400lb. every Friday, throughout the year.

For these supplies the Crown officers were enjoined to pay ready money, at the following rates:—An ox, £4; a boar, 13*s.* 4*d.*; a sheep, calf, or pig, 6*s.* 8*d.*; a flitch of bacon, 2*s.*; a lamb, 1*s.*; a dozen geese or capons, 4*s.*; a dozen hens or chickens, 2*s.*; a dozen pullets, 1*s.* 6*d.* Butter was to be paid for at 3½*d.* a lb., between Apr. and Sept., and at 4*d.* a lb. between October and March.

The cattle and poultry were to be delivered alive, and their keep, after one day's grace from the day appointed for delivery, was to be charged to the Crown. But the Crown officials might reject cattle or fowls, on the ground of unfitness for the use of the royal household. In all such cases, the contractor was to pay, in ready money, for each beast rejected, £7 for an ox; £2 for a boar; 15*s.* for a sheep, calf, or pig; 7*s.* for a flitch of bacon; and 5*s.* for a lamb; and for poultry rejected, at the London market rate. A wide door for peculation was thus opened. The board of arbiters, which was to judge between contractor and official, was never appointed. Honest contractors found sound beasts rejected, unless accompanied by a bribe; dishonest contractors, remitting a bribe, passed in inferior animals.

Taking these forfeit-prices as representing the market price of 1593, it follows that, *on cattle alone*, the county had to add £607 3*s.* 4*d.* to the queen's price to meet the purveyance-charge.

Further, special provision was made for any 'progress' (*i.e.*, journey) taken by the Queen through any part of Essex. In this case, in addition to the provisions specified in the above agreement, the purveyors were empowered 'to provide all manner of provisions and victualls.' It is true that these were directed to be paid for in ready money, and 'according to the prices then in the market.' But these prices were fixed by a Crown official, the Clerk of the Market, presiding over a jury afraid to contradict any word of his. 'Howsoever hee doe yt by a jury, yet by choosinge weake and insufficient jurors, and by his directions, and some tymes threates to them, he procureth all

sorts of provisions to bee much underprezed to the greate prejudice of the countie' (Essex Petition, April 1631).

In 1622 Crown Commissioners went on circuit throughout England endeavouring to get the counties to buy off the purveyance-services by fixed money-payments. Negociations with Essex were opened at Chelmsford, 17 Sept. 1622, but speedily fell through, partly because the Crown Commissioners would not assent to the County demand for full publicity of the proceedings, partly because the Crown terms were judged excessive.

The Crown for each ox asked £5, the county offered £3. Similarly, the other demands and offers were :—Boar, £2 6*s.* 8*d.* (£2) ; sheep or pig, 13*s.* 4*d.* (8*s.* 4*d.*) ; calf, 13*s.* 4*d.* (10*s.*) ; lamb, 6*s.* (5*s.*) ; dozen geese or capons, 16*s.* (12*s.*) ; dozen hens, 12*s.* (10*s.*) ; dozen chickens, 4*s.* (2*s.*) ; lb. of butter 2*d.* (1*d.*). The only items in which demand and offer coincided were, bacon-flitch 5*s.*, and dozen of pullets 8*s.* 6*d.* These sums, it is to be understood, are in each case additional to 'the King's price.'

To commute the wheat-levy the Crown asked 30*s.* a quarter, the county offered 20*s.*, to be added to 6*s.* 8*d.*, a quarter, the King's price. Here the County offer appears really inadequate. In Oxford market the quarter of wheat sold at, in May 1619, 32*s.*; Nov. 1619, 29*s.* 6*d.*; March 1621, 22*s.* 6*d.*; in Aug. 1623, 36*s.* 6*d.*; in July 1625, 52*s.*

We now learn the extent, and the cost, of the other purveyance charges. Essex was required to furnish yearly 132½ loads of hay, 1,425 quarters of oats, 70 loads of straw for stable-litter, 760 loads of firewood, and 200 loads of charcoal (the favourite fuel for kitchen use). The King's prices were:—Load of hay, 8*s.* ; quarter of oats, 4*s.* ; load straw, 4*s.*; load wood, 3*s.*; load charcoal, 13*s.* 9*d.* The Commissioners demanded, and the county offered, load hay, 16*s.* (8*s.*); quarter oats, 6*s.* 8*d.* (4*s.*) ; load straw, 6*s.* (2*s.*) ; load wood, 4*s.* (2*s.*) ; load charcoal, 20*s.* (6*s.* 7*d.*) *i.e.* in addition to 'the King's price.

For cart-taking for his Majesty's removes, and for his Majesty's household and stable, the Commissioners demanded £500 a year; the county offered only £400.

Taking both purveyance and cart-taking together, the Crown Commissioners asked a yearly composition of £3,566; the county offered only £2,303.

The county, therefore, continued to discharge its purveyance-service by means of contractors. We are able, in certain items, to compare the amounts of composition asked by the Crown Commissioners, and offered by the county, in 1622, with the amounts actually paid by the county in 1625—a startling increase, by which it would appear that the county lost by not commuting in 1622.

Amount asked in 1622.	£ s. d.	County offer in 1622.	£ s. d.	Payments in 1625.	£ s. d.
Cattle, pigs, and bacon ..	948 3 4		696 3 4		1,080 13 4
Poultry	66 4 0		47 0 0		115 0 0
Butter	346 13 4		173 6 8		300 0 0
	£1,361 0 8		£916 10 0		£1495 13 4

In 1625 the prices of cattle seem to have been:—Ox, £10 10*s.*; boar, £2 13*s.* 4*d.*; pig, 23*s.*; calf, 22*s.*; sheep, 19*s.* 8*d.*; lamb, 8*s.* The bacon-flitch stood at 10*s.*

NOTES OF THE QUARTER.

Church Restorations.

Maldon.—A new window in All Saints' Church was dedicated on June 29. It has been contributed to by the children of All Saints' and St. Peter's parishes, and is placed near the font at the west end of the church. The subject is Christ as the Good Shepherd.

Great Yeldham.—The peal of six bells in the parish church, which have been repaired and restored, were dedicated at a special service on August 25, when the Rev. A. F. Evans, rural dean, of Great Maplestead, preached an appropriate sermon. Four of the six bells have been re-cast. The belfry floor has been renewed, and the bells re-hung upon an iron frame. A chiming apparatus has been added. Ringers from the neighbouring parishes assisted at the bell-ringing which took place during the afternoon and evening.

Stebbing.

A carved oak font cover and a brass ewer on oak pedestal have been presented by Mrs. Bingham Wright to the church, in memory of the late vicar. On the cover of the font is a brass plate bearing the following inscription:—

To the Glory of God, and in memory of the Rev. A. R. Bingham-Wright, 34 years vicar of this parish, died June 12th, 1903, and Mary Sophia Cecily Bingham, his daughter, who died November 26th, 1905.

A dedication service was held on 15th September.

Obituaries.

Sir MATTHEW WOOD, fourth baronet, son of Sir Francis Wood, of Hatherley House, Gloucester, and grandson of Sir John Page Wood, of Rivenhall Place, died on July 12, in London, aged 50. He was buried at Cressing Church on the 16th. He succeeded to the title when nine years old, and his heir and the present baronet is his brother, Lieut. Colonel Sir John Page Wood, commanding the 2nd Battalion Border Regiment.

Mr. ROBERT COOK, known throughout the County for his close connection with its sports, died very suddenly at his residence, White House Farm, Baddow, on 7th August, at the age of 50. Mr. Cook had long contributed to our pages, and his annual survey of the season's cricket was regularly looked for. The zeal which he threw into every sport was the same which enabled him, as Secretary for 23 years, to render the Essex Football Association one of the best organised County Associations in the kingdom. He founded the Annual County Sports Meeting in 1885, and only in July last described its progress in the *Review*. In many other counties he will be missed in sport, for he was very widely known. He had acted as starter of the National Cyclists' Union championships for twenty years. Mr. Cook brought a high and healthy ideal into all games, his coolness, his judgment, and his inexhaustible energy and humour were truly invaluable. He was a man of leisure, unmarried, and possessed of a moderate competence, which he has devised largely to County athletics. His popularity was shown by his election to the Chelmstord Town Council in 1906 by a huge majority. The demonstration of interest at his funeral on August 11th was a remarkable one.

Colonel Sir FREDERICK BRIDGES MAJOR HENNIKER, son of Sir Bridges Powell Henniker, late of Newton Hall, Dunmow, died at sea on August 19, on his way home from India. He was born in 1862, and succeeded his father in 1906.

Doctor JOHN TAYLOR, of Earls Colne, died on September 4th in his ninetieth year. He qualified as a member of the Royal College of Surgeons in 1842, and settled soon after to help his father, Dr. John Polley Taylor, of Earls Colne. For fifty years he had been medical officer of a district of Halstead Union, and

connected with Halstead Rural Council. He was a strong supporter of many medical benevolent societies, a Governor of Earls Colne Grammar School, a thorough all-round sportsman, and one of the most popular inhabitants of the district where he had so long lived, He was unmarried.

NOTES AND QUERIES.

Small Holdings.*—Let me at once disarm criticism by saying that I am not going to discuss the subject as a modern measure. I am no politician—as we use the word—and I have nothing to say here on its present aspect. I only want to throw a little antiquarian light upon it; for it is no invention of modern politicians In getting up my little Church Society Lectures, I have come across some interesting details of small holdings in Norman times. In the Domesday record, made in the year 1086, a good many instances in this neighbourhood are noted. (I take as a small holding anything of 60 acres and under.) On our High Easter Manor there were no small freeholders. There were 54 villeins and 46 bordars (cottage tenants), but they were not free, as will be seen. The villeins held, as a rule, 30 acres, or less, and the bordars about half as much, but they held their land on conditions which we should not put up with now. They had to do burdensome service for the lord of the manor. Each villein had to plough in spring four acres; to supply two oxen for the lord's teams; to work for him three days a week, and to pay him yearly 2s. 1½d. (which represents about £2 10s. of our money) and a hen and fifteen eggs. Neither might he have his land as and where he pleased, or grow what he pleased. He had it in separate strips at the lord's will, and was bound to crop it according to rule. And of course he had to turn out and fight, if the lord wanted soldiers. The bordars, a lower class, had also to do service, but they had not to provide oxen. In some neighbouring parishes there were a good number of small freeholders. For instance, in the Chignals there were seven holdings ranging from ten to forty-five acres. One holder had three bordars to help him; the rest apparently had no help except from their families. Two had a

*The following was written for the Parish Magazine. Mr. Gepp kindly allows us to reprint it.—Ed.

plough each (a plough implies eight oxen), and I suppose their neighbours who had none borrowed these. Each had a bit of meadow, two to seven acres; and that is all; no woodland for swine, and no animals, except perhaps poultry. Their rent was remarkably low, the highest 10s. for forty-five acres, the lowest 3s. for thirty acres, but it must be remembered that money was worth then about twenty-four times as much as it is now; and no doubt the tenants had to do service to some lord, though less than the villeins and bordars. In Mashbury, Abbess and White Rodings, Shellow, and Willingale Doe, were similar holdings, three of which had a bit of woodland. Otherwise they were as poorly furnished as the Chignal holdings. How these small holders made a living it is hard to see. They must have been content with little, and a rough hard life. There were no markets about here then. Chelmsford and Dunmow were not yet towns. Chelmsford had no market till the end of the twelfth century, and Dunmow none till the beginning of the thirteenth. It is said that Chelmsford was then less important than Writtle, where the London to Colchester road then crossed the river. Apparently Chelmsford had no bridge till 1100, and certainly the manor of Writtle was far more important than the Chelmsford manors. In contrast to these poor small holdings there were in Dunmow parish three thriving ones, one remarkably so. It was of thirty-seven acres only, but the holder had three bordars, a serf (slave), a plough (eight oxen) woodland for thirty-seven swine, five acres of meadow, five cows, eight swine, thirteen sheep, seven goats, and a mill. His rent was £1.

Such are examples of small holdings over 800 years ago; and the system was an old one then, having long existed, and under better administration, in English villages before the coming of the Normans. Now the cry is 'back to the land,' back to small holdings, only in happier circumstances, free from such burdensome service to the landlord. Whether it will succeed here and now we shall soon see. But I am not going to discuss it in the Magazine.—EDWARD GEPP, High Easter.

Croppenbergh Family.—I should be much obliged for any information as to the marriage of George Sherard and Ann Croppenbergh, which took place prior to 1652. Mary

Croppenbergh (mother of Ann) in her Will (proved 1652) describes herself as a widow. The family tradition is that the father of Ann Croppenbergh was a London merchant, and was one of those who carried out the drainage of the Fens.

Pierce G. Mahony, *Cork Herald of Arms, Office of Arms, Dublin Castle.*

[Sir Henry Appleton and other owners of Canvey lands agreed by deed, dated 9th April 1622, to give one third of the lands in fee simple to Joas Croppenbergh, in consideration of his sufficiently 'inning 'and recovering the islands. In this he was successful, and is referred to p. 148 ante. South Benfleet marriage register runs from 1583 (*cf. E.R.*, vii., 181), Leigh from 1691 (*cf. E.R.*, viii., 210), Canvey only from June, 1861 (*cf. E.R.*, viii., 13). The former looks hopeful.—Eds.]

It has been ascertained that George Sherard was married to Ann Croppenbergh on the 31st of July, 1651, at St. James'. Mary Croppenbergh mentions in her will her son-in-law, Joseph Alston, husband of her daughter Mary, and her brother John Vermuden, as well as her son-in-law George Sherard and his son William Sherard.

Beacons in Essex.—Beacons, at fixed points on the coast and on conspicuous heights inland, were long maintained as part of the defences of the country. Dr. C. H. Firth's *Essex Lieutenancy Book* (MS.) gives us some precise information about beacons in Essex. In April 1619 it was certified that there were no beacons in Donmowe, Freshwell, Claveringe, Vttleford, and Harlow hundreds; but that Rochford hundred had 5 beacons (Foullnes, Canuden, Shoberry, Milton, Rayley); Waltham half-hundred, 1 (Eppinge); Lexden hundred, 1 (Stanway); Barstable hundred, 2 (places not stated); Ongar hundred, 1 (Navestocke); Tenderinge hundred, 3 (St. Osith, Walton, Harwich-and-Dover-Cort); and Chelmsford hundred, 1 (Danbury). A return in 1625 adds Thurstable hundred, 1 (Totham); and Dengie hundred, 3 (Norton, Sudmister, St. Lawrance). The same MS. shows how the beacons were kept up. Feb. 11, 1618 9, the Privy Council ordered the Lord Lieutenant of Essex to have the trained bands in readiness to march on 10 days' notice, and to cause the beacons 'to be amended, and furnished with materialls for fyringe, and duly watched.' The Lord Lieutenant (Robert Ratcliffe, 5th Earl of Sussex), then

lying ill at his house in Bracknell, Berkshire, transmitted the orders to the Deputy Lieutenants, and they, by letters sent out 25 February, directed 'the Justices of Peace in everie division to cause all the beacons to be speedily repaired, furnished with materialls for fyreinge, and speedilie watched.' On 28 April 1619 the Privy Council told the Lord Lieutenant that the cost of special watch at the beacons need no longer be incurred. Accordingly, on 30 April 1619 the Deputy Lieutenants instructed the Justices of Peace to discontinue any special watch at the beacons, and continue only such watches 'as were formerly found requisite to be held'; also, to levy 'within such severall partes of the division as in tymes past have beene accustomably charged with this service' a sufficient rate to repay the persons who had laid out the money necessary for repairs, fuel, and watching. I have found no indication of what districts were subjected to this special tax.—ANDREW CLARK.

MET. BOROUGH OF POPLAR PUBLIC LIBRARIES

REVIEWS OF BOOKS.

Lincoln College, Oxford, by Stephen A. Warner, B.A. London: Arnold Fairbairns and Co., Ltd.; with 37 pen-and-ink drawings, 37 collotype plates, etc.; 120 pp., 6s.; edition de luxe, 100 copies only, 15s.

MR. WARNER is already known to Essex readers as joint author, with Miss Cunnington, of a delightful monograph on *Braintree and Bocking* (*E.R.* xvi., 51-5). In the present volume he has applied his talents as historian and artist to celebrate the College of his education and his affection. No more delightful volume could be conceived. The illustrations are charming, and include delineations of buildings, portraits of Lincoln men, figures of College plate, College seals, the scourge formerly used for College discipline, chests of three kings, and other quaint antiquities. The letterpress is equally delightful. In an introduction of 21 pp. the foundation and fortunes of the College are described in the deftest and daintiest manner. Other chapters give, with no less incisiveness and wit, accounts of College estates, buildings, customs. Lincoln College is rapidly approaching its 500th centenary. It has therefore waited long for its artist-historian, but has at last found him. Essex readers

will note with interest that three of the finest pieces of silver plate are gifts by Essex men, former members of the College: (a) a lovely filigree cake-basket, given about 1763 by Nicholas Corsellis, of Wivenhoe (p. 72); a tankard, 40 oz. 8 dwt., of date 1702, given by said Nicholas' father (p. 74); and a porringer, of date 1679, given by Sir Henry Wright, of Dagenham.

A Book of Simples. Demy 8vo., pp. viii., 226. London: Sampson Low, Marston and Co. Price 14s.

The collector's passion for old china, chairs, prints, snuff-boxes, and all the trifles used by our great grandmothers has spread of late to such an extent that there is nothing decently old that does not now command respect and a price. To be old-fashioned, a score of years ago or more, was to be condemned and thrust into the lumber room or kitchen; nowadays, on the contrary, age is universally recognised to impart a nameless charm to everything except a woman or a glove. With the taste for old furniture has come also a love and admiration for old-time customs, for herbals, manuals of housewifery, books of recipes, nostrums and cures. In what exactly this charm resides it is difficult to say. The value is not a practical one, for the last thing that the admirer would dream of undertaking would be to carry out literally any one of the recipes so elaborately compiled years ago. The purely sentimental admiration that one feels comes, like a waft of spices and perfumes, a flavour of richness and extravagance and of taking pains, down the centuries and makes us sigh for the lavender-scented store rooms and old walled herb gardens that seem so far away from the hurtle of modern times.

The book of simples before us differs little from any of the many other recipe books that have passed through many editions, and set the busy hands of five or six centuries of Englishwomen to work. But it comes straight from the hand of some neat and skilful copyist, and had lain hidden for many years in some careful press or cupboard. Mr. H. W. Lewer did well to give us a chance to peruse these fragrant and epicurean delights, and both he and the publishers deserve the hearty thanks of everyone for preserving and issuing them in such tasteful guise. The manuscript volume, which was found among the treasures of Mr. Chalkley Gould's library, has

been closely adhered to in the printed copy. The rich green morocco cover, tooled in gold, has been copied as nearly as possible in a stiff binding, and type and paper are eminently creditable to the Chiswick Press. The retention of the long 's' is quite appropriate. In the Introduction Mr. Lewer brings us at once into relation with the conditions of life when such books were the adjunct of every household. 'The isolation of the country in those days is almost inconceivable; the difficulties of travel were immense and a survival of feudal legislation tied the labourer to the soil. Thus, we may look upon the manor or farmhouse with its retainers as a detached social unit and in a sparsely populated country almost a state in itself.' It was well to include a bibliography of herbals and cookery books prior to 1800, but the very popular works of Mrs. Hannah Woolley (b. 1620), the schoolmaster's wife, of Newport, Essex, are omitted.* The glossary is a welcome addition, but it should have included Mumme, Ebulum, Organy, Gennaye, which are all 'hard words' in the Index. As for the contents, we have already had a summary of them in the *Review* (vol. xvii., p. 66). One of the most remarkable recipes is that 'To Boyle Sugar to a Manus Christi:—Boyle it till it be almost sugar again and the last drop of your spoon there will a hair drop from it as fine as the hair of your head.' One would be glad to know the connection with its title. Quite the most useful would be the ointment and the powder which are to cure defective memories by anointing the 'hinder part of the head, your poule and temple especially.' Perhaps the least appetising is the short cure for wind: 'Take 9 bees pound them and put them to a quarter of a pint of ale stir well together and strain it sweeten it with honey give it the afflicted persons to drink they must till it has work'd.'

In *The Romance of George Villiers First Duke of Buckingham*, by Philip Gibbs (Methuen, 1908), there are one or two additional facts to add to the story of New Hall recently told in our pages. It was Buckingham, it seems, who laid out the grounds of New Hall, where he sought at times retirement from the glare of Court life and favouritism. His wife, the beautiful and devoted Kate, spent much time there, and his mother was also a frequent visitor. In February 1623, the old King's two 'sweete

*See *E.R.*, ix., p. 143.

boys,' as he called Charles Prince of Wales and Buckingham, bade James a secret good-bye at Newmarket, rode to New Hall to sleep and bid Kate farewell, then on to Gravesend to set sail for Madrid on the useless journey to court the Infanta of Spain. A few months later, Kate wrote in one of those tender and sweet letters of hers to her dazzling and very errant husband, whom, however, she always forgave and continued to adore, as follows (p. 180) :—'When the King went to New Hall it was reported here in town he went to meet you there. I would they had said truly. For my own part I should a been very glad of it, and so I know would you ; but I am sure I have most reason. My lord, I have not yet been to New Hall, but I do intend shortly to go see how forward things are there. The walk to the house is done, and the tennis-courts almost done, but the garden is not done, nor nothing to the bowling-green, and yet I told Fotherbe, and he told me he would set men to work presently. But I do warrant you they will all be ready before you come for Buely [Beaulieu, *i.e.*, New Hall]. I heard the wall is not very forward yet, and my lady [Buckingham's mother] bade me send you word that she is gone down to look how things are there. She says she is about making a little river to run through the park, it will be about sixteen feet broad ; but she says she wants money. Thus hoping I have obeyed your commands in sending you word of all things you bade me, I rest your most dutiful wife till death, K. BUCKINGHAM.'

We understand a volume is about to be published by subscription entitled *Historical Records of the 11th Prince Albert's Own Hussars, from their Foundation as Honywood's Dragoons to the Present Day*. The author is Capt. Godfrey Trevelyan Williams, and the book will be illustrated with coloured plates, maps, and other illustrations. The price to subscribers is 42s. nett. The interest to Essex readers lies especially in the connection of the regiment with the Marks Hall Honeywoods, it having been raised by Colonel Philip Honeywood at the beginning of the 18th century. A portrait of him appears in the book, which we have not seen. We suppose it is the famous Gainsborough portrait, illustrated in *E.R.*, vol. vii., p. 168, which was on view at the Winter Exhibition of the Royal Academy a short time back. The services of the regiment from 'the fifteen' (1715)

down to the year of Ladysmith and the present time cover many of the famous battles of history. Preston, Culloden, Corunna, Waterloo, Balaclava are among its records. Application for copies may be made through Messrs. Cox and Co., Charing Cross. We notice that Captain Williams omits the 'e' in Honeywood, which the Essex branch of the family invariably used.

A Report of the Colchester Corporation Museum for the year ending March 1908 has reached us, and gives satisfactory account of the onward progress of this invaluable county collection. Electric light installation has been carefully carried out, and the subject of extension or building will soon have to be grappled with. Among the gifts of the past year is the interesting example of an Essex chaff box recently illustrated in our pages (*E.R.* xvii., 26), and a volume of Morant MSS., with a pencil portrait of the historian. The Hon. Curator, Alderman Henry Laver, F.S.A., has now presented to the Museum the whole of the valuable objects deposited by him from time to time.

The Story of a Hundred Years, 1808-1908, being an account of the rise and progress of the Chelmsford Sunday School, by William Bewers and Frank H. Owers, with an introduction by Rev. T. McDougall Mundle (pp. 80, paper 9d., cloth 2s.) is the title of a capital little pamphlet which was prepared for the centenary celebrations held last July at the chapel in London Road, Chelmsford. It is illustrated by innumerable photographs, and makes a handy record of the work of the period covered. A reproduction of an old print showing the chapel, the bridge, and the river Chelmer in 1840 is quite interesting. The building is little altered externally to-day.

Mr. Aylmer Maude, of Great Baddow, who is well known as a translator of Tolstoy's Works, is the author of a 'Life' of the great Russian teacher, recently published by Messrs. Constable and Co. (price 10s. 6d.). The first fifty years of Tolstoy's life are dealt with very exhaustively, in a manner only possible to one so thoroughly acquainted with his writings, and with Russia, as is Mr. Maude. A later volume will continue the work at some future time. We should add that Mrs. Maude is closely associated with her husband in all his literary work, and is equally well acquainted with the Russian tongue.